Wm Poppe.

BIAΘANATOΣ.

A

DECLARATION

OF THAT

PARADOXE,

OR

THESIS,

That Self-homicide *is not so naturally Sin, that it may never be otherwise.*

Wherein

The Nature, and the extent of all those Lawes, which seeme to be violated by this Act, are diligently surveyed.

Written by John Donne, *who afterwards received Orders from the* Church of England *and dyed* Deane *of St* Pauls, London.

Jo: Saresb. de nugis Curial. Prolog.
Non omnia vera esse profiteor. Sed legentium usibus inservire.

Published by Authority.

LONDON,
Printed for Humphrey Moseley, and are to be sold at his shop at the Princes Armes in St Pauls Churchyard. 1648.

LIBRARY OF THE UNION SEMINARY

TO THE
Right Honourable
THE LORD
PHILLIP HARBERT.

My Lord,

Although I have not exactly obeyed your commands, yet, I hope, I have exceeded them, by presenting to your Honor, the *Treatise,*

tiſe, which is, ſo much the better, by being none of mine owne, and may therefore peradventure, deſerve to live, for facilitating the Iſſues of Death.

It was writ, long ſince, by my Father, and by him, forbid both the Preſſe, and the Fire; neither had I ſubjected it now, to the publique view, but that, I could finde no certaine way to defend it from the one, but by committing it to the other; For, ſince the beginning of this War, my Study having been often ſearched, all my Books (and al- moſt my braines, by their continuall allarums ſequeſtred, for the uſe of the Committee; two dangers

appeared

appeared more eminently to hover over this, being then a Manuſcript; a danger of being utterly loſt, and a danger of being utterly found; and fathered, by ſome of thoſe wild Atheiſts, who, as if they came into the World by conqueſt, owne all other mens Wits, and are reſolved to be learned, in deſpite of their Starres, that would fairely have enclined them, to a more modeſt, and honeſt courſe of life.

Your Lordſhips Protection will defend this Innocent from theſe two Monſters, Men that cannot write, and Men that cannot reade, and, I am very confident all thoſe that can, will think it

it may deſerve this favour from your Lordſhip; For, although this Booke appeare under the notion of a Paradox, yet, I deſire your Lordſhip, to looke upon this Doctrine, as a firme and eſtabliſhed truth.

Da vida oſar morir.

Your Lordſhips
moſt humble Servant

From my houſe in Covent-Garden. 28.

IO: DONNE.

Authors cited in this Booke.

Beza.
B. Dorotheus.
Bosquierus.
Athenagoras.
Cansæus.
Trismegistus.
Theodoricus A. Niem.
Steuchius Eugubi.
Ennodius.
Pererius
Zambanus
Alcoran
Corpus Iur: Canon.
Carbo, Summa Summarum
Polidorus Virgilius
Natalius Metellus, Præfat. in Osor. Histor.
Pierius
S. Ambrosius
Cardanus
Tholosa: Syntagm.
S. Cyprianus
Hadri: Junius
Emanuel Sâ
Nicephorus
S. Gregorius
Vasques
Clarus Bonarsius
Corpus Iur: Civil.
Binnius
Bracton
Plowden
A: Gellius
Tertullian
Climachus
Basil
Filesacus
Campianus
S. Hieronimus
Ben: Gorion
Plinius
Baleotus de Notb.
Canones Pœnitenti:
Clemens Alex:
Sotus
Bodin

Sylvius
Miadendorpius
Lucidus
Arpilcueta
Fabricius Hist: Cicero.
Windeckus
Lipsius
Porphyrius
Damasus
Feuardentius
Eusebius
Vincentii Speculum
Prateolus
Diodorus Siculus
Tho: Morus
Anto: Augustin.
P. Manutius
Sebast: Medices
Scotus
Calvinus
Forestus de Venen.
Serarius
Biblia Sacra
Humfredus Angl.
Mallonius in Paleotti Sindon.
S. Chrysostomus
Pontius Paulinus
Aquinas
Azorius
Sayr

Elianus
Cajetanus
S. Augustinus
Artemidorus
I. Cæsar
Josephus
Vegetius
Acacius
Jo: Picus
Hen nius
Latinus Pacatus
Platina
Baronius
Ignatius
Alfon: Castro
Schultingius
Plato
Simancha
Alb. Gentilis
Pruckmannus
P. Pomponatius
Buxdorfius
Anto: de Corduba
Thyræus
Lavater
Nauclerus
Quintilianus
Toletus
Sulpitius
Adrianus Quodlib.
Beccaria

Vita

Vita Phil: Nerii
Maldonatus
Bonaventura
Gregor: Nazianz.
Canones Apostolorum
Lucas de Penna
Optinellus
Laertius
Binsfeldius
Pedraça
Sextus Senensis
Paracelsus
Metaphrastes.
Surius
Gregor: de Valentia
Brentius
Theophilact
Hesichius
Marloratus
Schlusselburgius
Agapetus
Reuchlin
Martialis ad Thole:
Saravia
Sylvester
Liber Coformitatum S. Franc. et Christi.
Cassianus
Procop. Gazæus
Ardoinus
Greg. Turon
Supplem Chronic.
Nazarius Paneg.
Menghi
Ioan. de Lapide
Hippocrates
Bellarminus
Revelation. Brigidæ
Regul. Iesuit.
Franc. Gregorius
Oecumenius
Origenes
Alcuinus
Corn Celsus
Idiotæ Contemplatio de morte
Baldus
Aristoteles
Stanford
Bartolus
P. Martyr
Declaration des Doctes en France
Sedulius Minorita
Io Gerson
Lylius Geraldus
Mariana
Sansovinus
Lambert
Fra. a Victoria
Wierus

Kepplerus
Lyra
Burgenſis
P. Lombard
Sophronius
Schultetus
Euthymius
Paterculus
Caßanæus

IN citing theſe authors, for thoſe which I produce only for ornament and illuſtration, I have truſted my owne old notes; which though I have no reaſon to ſuſpect, yet I confeſs here my lazines; and that I did not refreſh them with going to the Originall. Of thoſe few which I have not ſeene in the bookes themſelves, (for there are ſome ſuch, even of places cited for greateſt ſtrength,) beſides the integrity of my purpoſe, I have this ſafe defence againſt any quarreller, that what place ſoever I cite from any Catholique Author, if I have not conſidered the Book it ſelfe, I cite him from another Catholique Writer. And the like courſe I hold in the Reformers. So that I ſhall hardly be condemned of any falſe citation, except to make me Acceſſorie, they pronounce one of their owne friends principall.

A diſtribution of this Book, into Parts, Diſtinctions, and Sections.

Preface.

1 THe *Reaſon of this Diſcourſe.*
2 *Incitements to charity towards thoſe which doe it.*
3 *Incitements to Charity towards the Author.*
4 *Why it is not inconvenient now to handle this.*
5 *Deſſentions among ſchollars more, and harder to end then among others.*
6 *In ſuch perplexities we ought to incline to that ſide which favours the dead.*
7 *Why I make it ſo publique.*
8 *What reader I deſire to have.*
9 *The reaſons why there are ſo many citations.*
10 *God puniſheth that ſin moſt, which occaſions moſt ſin in others.*

The firſt part, firſt Diſtinction, firſt Section.

1 *Why we firſt prove, that this ſin is not irremiſſible.*

Sect. 2.

1 *Three ſorts of miſtakers of this ſin.*

Sect. 3

1 *That all deſperation is not haynous; and that* Self-homicide *doth not alwaies proceed from deſperation.*
2 *It may be without Infidelity.*

3 *When it is* pœna peccati *it is* involuntarium.
4 *The reason why men ordinarily aggravate desperation*
5 *Of the second opinion, which is of impenitiblenes.*
6 *Of* Calvins *opinion, that it may be.*
7 *None impeccable, nor impenitible.*

Sect. 4.

1 *Of the third sort, which presume actuall impenitence by reason of this Act.*
2 *Which is the safer side in doubtfull cases.*
3 *In* Articulo Mortis, *the Church ever interprets favourably.*
4 *What true repentance is by* Clement.
5 *Witnesses which acquit, more credited, then they which accuse, in the Cannon Law.*

Sect. 5.

1 *Why we wayve the Ordinary definition of Sin taken from Saint* Augustine, *and follow another taken from* Aquinas.
2 *Of the torturing practice of Casuists.*
3 *Of the eternall Law of God, in Saint* Augustines *Definition, against which a man may doe without sinne.*
4 *Of the Definition which we follow.*

Sect. 6.

1 *How Law of Nature, and of reason, and of God, exhibited in this definition, are all one; and how diversly accepted.*
2 *In some cases all these three Lawes may be broken at once.* *As*
3 *In revealing a secret.*
4 *In Parricide.*

Sect. 7.

1 *Of the Law of Nature, and that against it strictly taken, either no sinne, or all sinne is done.*
2 *To doe against Nature makes us not guilty of a greater sinne, but more inexcusable.*
3 *No action so evill, that it is never good.*

The Contents.

4 *No evill in act, but disobedience.*

5 *Lying naturally worse then* Selfe-homicide.

6 *Fame may be neglected: yet we are as much bound to preserve fame, as life.*

7 *God cannot command a sinne, yet he can command a murther.*

8 *Orginall sin, cause of all sin, is from nature.*

Sect. 8.

1 *That if our Adversaries by Law of nature mean only sensitive Nature, they say nothing, for so most vertuous actions are against nature.*

Sect. 9.

1 *As the Law of nature is* recta ratio, *that is,* Jus gentium. *So immolation, and Idolatry are not against law of Nature.*

Sect. 10.

1 *As reason is the form, and so the nature of a man, every sinne is against nature: yea, whatsoever agrees not exactly with Christian Religion.*

2 *Vertue produced to Act, differs so from Reason, as a medicine made and applyed, from a boxe of drugs.*

Dist. 2. Sect. 1.

1 *Sinnes against Nature in a particular sense, are by schoolmen said to be unnatural Lusts, and This. But in Scripture only the first is so called.*

2 *Of the example of the Levite in the Judges, where the Vulgate Edition, calls it sin against Nature.*

3 S. Pauls *use of that phrase Law of Nature, in long haire.*

4 Vegetius *use of that phrase.*

Sect. 2.

1 *Self preservation is not so of particular Law of Nature, but that Beasts naturally transgresse it, whom it binds more then us. And we, when the reason of it ceases in us, may transgresse it, and sometimes must.*

2 *Things naturall to the* Species, *are not alwaies so to the* Individuall.

3 *There-*

The Contents.

3 *Thereupon ſome may retire into Solitude.*
4 *The firſt principles in Naturall law, are obligatory, but not deductions from thence, and the lower we deſcend the weaker they are.*
5 *Pellicans. And by* S. Ambroſe, *Bees kill themſelves.*
6 *The Reaſon of almoſt every law is mutable.*
7 *He that can declare where the reaſon ceaſes, may diſpence with the Law.*
8 *In what manner diſpenſations worke.*
9 *As nothing can annull the prerogatives of Princes or of Popes, though their own act ſeem to provide againſt it, ſo no law ſo much deſtroyes mans liberty, but that he returns to it, when the reaſon of that law ceaſes.*
10 *Self-preſervation, which is but an appetition of that which is good in our opinion, is not violated by* Self-homicide.
11 *Liberty, which is naturally to be preſerved, may be departed withall, when our will is to doe ſo.*

Sect. 3.

5 *That cannot bee againſt law of nature, which men have ever affected, if it be alſo (as this is) againſt ſenſitive nature, and ſo want the allurements which other ſins have.*
2. *There are not ſo many examples of all other vertues, as are of this one degree of fortitude.*
3 *Of* Romane *Gladiators. Of their great numbers, great perſons, and women.*
4 *With how ſmall perſuaſions* Eleazar *in* Ioſephus *drew men to it.*
5 *Wives in the* Indies *doe it yet.*
6 *The* Samanæi *Prieſts in the* Indies, *notorious for good life and death did it.*
7 Latinus Pacatus *expreſſeth this deſire pathetically.*
8 *By what means the Spaniards corrected this naturall deſire in the* Indies. Diſt. 3. Sect. 1.
1 *After civility and chriſtianity quenched this naturall deſire, in the place thereof ſucceeded a thirſt of Martyrdome.*

How

The Contents.

2 *How leasurely the custome of killing at funerals wore out.*
3 *Philosophers saw, and* Moses *delivered the state of the next life, but unperfectly,*

Sect. 2.

1 *That Martyrdome was by the Fathers insinuated into men, for the most part by naturall Reasons, and much upon humane respects.*
2 *So proceeded* Clement.
3 *So did* Tertullian.
4 *So did* Cyprian.
5 *Externall honours to Martyrs.*
6 *Monopoly of Martyrdome*
7 *Gods punishments upon their persecutors encouraged men to it.*
8 *Priviledges of Martyrs extended to many.*
9 *Contrary Reasons cherisht this desire in them.*
10 Libellatici, *or compounders with the state, in* Cyprian.
11 *Flight in persecution condemned by* Tertullian.
12 *Death grew to be held necessary to make one a Martyr.*
13 *In times when they exceeded in indiscreet exposings of themselvs, they taught that Martyrs might be without death.*
14 *Professors in* Cyprian, *men who offred themselves before they were called.*
15 *Enforcers of their own Martyrdome.*
16 *Examples of inordinate affecting of Martyrdome.*
17 *Lawes forbidding more executions, made to despite Christians.*
18 *Glory in their number of Martyrs.*

Sect. 3.

1 *That Hereticks noting the dignity gaind by Martyrdome, laboured to avert them from it, but could not correct this naturall inclination.*
2 *They laboured the Magistrate to oppose this desire.*
3 Basilides *denyed Christ to have been crucified; and*

The Contents.

that therefore they dyed madly.

4 Helchesar, *that outward profession of Religion was not needfull; much lesse Martyrdome.*

5 *Which also the* Gnostici *taught: and why they prevailed not.*

Sect. 4.

1 *That Heretiques missing their purpose herein, tooke the naturall way of overtaking the Orthodox in numbers of Martyrs.*

2 Petilians *new way of Martyrdome.*

3 *Another new way of the* Circumcelliones, *or* Circuitores.

4 *The* Cataphrygæ *exceed in number.*

5 *The* Euphemitæ *for their numbers of Martyrs called* Martyrians.

Sect. 5.

1 *Hereupon Councels tooke it into their care to distinguish Martyrs, from those who dyed for naturall and humane respects.*

Sect. 6.

1 *Therefore later Authors doe somewhat remit the dignity of Martyrdome.*

2 *The Jesuits still professe an enormous love to such death.*

Distinction 4. Sect. 1.

1 *Lawes and Customes of well polished Estates having admitted it, it were rash to say it to be against Law of Nature.*

2 *True and Ideated Common-wealthes have allowed it.*

3. 4. Athenians, Romans.

5 *Of* Depontani.

6 Ethiopians.

7 *All Lawes presume this desire in men condemned.*

8 *In* Utopia *authorized.*

9 *And by* Plato *in certaine cases.*

10 *Conclusion of the first Part.*

The

The Contents.

The Second Part of the Law of Reason.

Distinct. 1. Sect. 1.

1 *That the Law of Reason is, Conclusions drawn from primary Reason or light of Nature, by discourse.*

2 *How much strength such deduced reasons have.*

Sect. 2.

1 *Of this kind of reasons, generall Lawes have greatest authoritie.*

2 *For it is of their essence that they agree with the Law of Nature.*

3 *And there is better testimony of their producing, then of particular mens opinions.*

Sect. 3.

1 *Of Lawes, the Emperiall Law ought first to be considered.*

2 *The reason of that Law is not abolished; but the confession of our dependencie upon it.*

3 *Why it is called Civill Law.*

4 *Of the vastnes of the books from whence it is concocted, and of the large extent thereof.*

5 *That yet in this so large Law there is nothing against our case.*

6 *Of the Law of* Adrian *concerning this in Souldiers.*

7 *Of the other Law concerning this in offendors already accused.*

Dist. 2. Sect. 1.

1 *Of the Cannon Law.*

2 *The largenes of the subject, and object thereof.*

3 *Of* Codex Canonum, *or the body of the Canon Law, in use in the primitive Church.*

Of the Additions to this Code since.

4 *Canon Law apter to condemn then the Civil, and why.*

Sect. 2.

1 *That this proposition is not hareticall by the Canon Law.*

2 Simancha

The Contents.

2 Simancha *his large Definition of Hæresy.*

3 *No decision of the church in the point.*

4 *Nor Canon nor Bull.*

5 *Of the common opinion of Fathers, and that that varies by times, and by places by* Azorius.

7 Gratian *cites but two Fathers, whereof one is on our side.*

8 *That that part of Canon Law, to which Canonists will stand, condemns not this.*

9 *A Catholique Bps. censure of* Gratian, *and his decret.*

Sect. 3

1 *What any Councells have done in this point.*

2 *Of the Councell of* Antisidore *under* Greg. 1. 590.

3 *That it only refusd their oblations.*

4 *That it was only a Dioceſan Councell.*

5 *The Councell of* Braccar. *inflicts two punishments.*

6 *The first, of not praying for them is meant of them who did it, when they were excommunicate.*

7 *The second, which is denying of buriall, is not always inflicted as a punishment, to an offendor; as appeares in a punishment to an offendor; as appears in a locall interdict.*

8 Romans *buried such offendors as had satisfied the law within the Towne, as they did Vestalls and Emperours.*

Dist. 3 Sect. 1

1 *Of the Laws of particular Nations.*

2 *Of our Law of* Felo de se.

3 *That this is by our Law Murder, and what reasons entitle the King to his good.*

4 *That our naturall desire to such dying, probably induced this customary Law.*

5 *As in States abounding with slaves, Law-makers quenched this desire, lest there should have beene no use of them.*

6 *Forbid lest it should draw too many: as hunting, and usury: and as wine by* Mahomet.

7 *Upon reason of generall inclinations we have severe Laws against thefs.*

8 *When*

8 *When a man is bound to ſteale.*
9 Sotus *his opinion of Day-theeues.*
10 *Of a like law againſt* Self-homicide *in the Earldome of Flaunders.* Sect. 2.
1 *Severe Laws are arguments of a generall inclination, not of a hainouſnes in the fact.*
2 *Faſting upon Sundays extremely condemned upon that reaſon.*
3 *So Duells in* France..
4 *So Bull-baitings in* Spaine.
5 *The hainouſnes of Rape, or Witch-craft are not diminiſhed, where the Laws againſt them were but eaſie.*
6 *Publike benefit is the rule of extending odious Laws, and reſtraining favourable.*
7 *If other nations concurre in like Laws, it ſheweth the inclination to be generall.*
Sect. 3.
1 *The Cuſtome of the Iews not burying till Sunn-ſet, and of the Athenians cutting off the dead hand evict not.*
Sect 4.
1 *The reaſons drawne from remedies, uſed upon ſome occaſions to prevent it, prove as little.*
Diſt. 4. Sect. 1.
1 *Of the reaſons uſed by particular men, being divines.*
2 *Of* S. Aug. *and of his argument againſt* Donatus.
3 *Of* S. Auguſtine *comparatively with other Fathers.*
4 *Compariſon of* Navar *and* Sotus.
5 *Ieſuits often beholding to* Calvin *for his expoſitions.*
6 *In this place we differ not from S.* Auguſtine.
7 *Nor in the ſecond cited by* Gratian.
8 *That there may be* Cauſa puniendi ſine culpa.
9 *As* Valens *the Emperor did miſſe* Theodoſius, *So S.* Auguſtine *prætermitted the right caſe.*
10 *Of* Cordubenſis *rule, how we muſt behave our ſelves in perplexities.*
11 *How temporall reward may be taken for ſpirituall offices.*

The Contents.

12 *Of* Pindarus *death praying for he knew not what.*

13 *In one place we depart from S.* Auguſtine *upon the ſame reaſon, as the Ieſuite* Thyræus *doth depart from him in another.*

Sect. 2.

1 *The place cited by* Gratian *out of S.* Hierome, *is on our ſide.*

Sect. 3.

1 Lavaters *confeſſion, that* Auguſtine, Hierome, Chryſoſtome, Lactantius, *are of this opinion.*

Sect. 4.

1 *Of* Peter Martyrs *reaſon,* Mors malum.

2 Clement *hath long ſince deſtroyed that reaſon.*

3 *Of* Malum pœnæ, *how farre it may bee wiſhed, and how farre it condemnes.*

4 *Poſſeſſed men are not alwaies ſo afflict for ſinne.*

5 *Damnation hath not ſo much* rationem mali, *as the leaſt ſinne.*

6 *If Death were of the worſt ſort of evill, yet there might be good uſe of it, as of Concupiſcence.*

7 *In what ſenſe S.* Paul *calles Death Gods enemy.*

8 *Death, ſince* Chriſt, *is not ſo evill as before.*

Sect. 5.

1 *Of* Peter Martyrs *reaſon,* Vita donum Dei.

Sect. 6.

1 *Of* Lavaters *reaſon of Iudges in all cauſes.*

2 *Where Confeſſion is not in uſe, there is no Iudge of ſecret ſinne.*

3 *Of the Popes Iuriſdiction over himſelfe.*

4 *Of ſuch Iuriſdiction in other perſons by Civil lawes.*

5 *Io: 22. elected himſelfe Pope.*

6 *Iuriſdiction over our ſelves is therefore denyed us;*

7 *becauſe we are preſumed favourable to our ſelves, not in caſes eſteemed hurtfull.*

8 *In caſes hurtfull we have ſuch Iuriſdiction.*

9 *Oath of* Gregory *in the great Schiſme.*

10 *When a man becomes to be* ſui Juris.

11 *Warre is juſt betweene Soveraigne Kings, becauſe they have no Iudge.*

12 *Princes give not themſelves priviledges; but declare that in that caſe they will exerciſe their inherent generall Priviledge.*

Sect. 7.

1 Joſephus *reaſon of* Depoſitum.

2 *A Depoſitarie cannot be accuſed* De Culpa, *but* De Dolo.

3 *A ſecret received* Data fide *is* In natura Depoſiti.

Sect. 8.

1 *Of ſimilitudinary reaſons in Authors not Divine.*

Sect. 9.

1 *Of* Joſephus *his reaſon of* Hoſtis.

Sect. 10.

1 *Of* Joſephus *reaſon of* Servus.

Sect. 11.

1 *Of* Joſephus *reaſon of a Pilot.*

Diſtinct. 5. Sect. 1.

1 *Of Saint* Thomas *two reaſons from Iuſtice, and Charitie.*

2 *Of that part of injuſtice, which is ſtealing himſelfe from the State.*

3 *Monaſtike retyring is,* in genere rei, *the ſame fault.*

4 *The better opinion is, that there is herein no injuſtice.*

5 *Of the other Injuſtice, of uſurping upon anothers Servant.*

6 *Though we have not* Dominium, *we have* Uſum *of this life: And we may relinquiſh it when we will.*

7 *The State is not Lord of our life, yet may take it away.*

8 *If injuſtice were herein done to the State, then by a licence from the State it may be lawfull.*

9 *And the State might recompence her Domage upon the goods or Heirs of the Delinquent.*

10 *In a man neceſſary to the State, there may bee ſome Injuſtice herein.*

The Contents.

11 *No man can doe injurie to himſelfe.*

12 *The queſtion whether it be againſt Charity, reſpited to the third part.*

Sect. 2.

1 *Of* Ariſtotles *two reaſons of Miſery and Puſillanimitie.*

Diſtinct. 6. Sect. 1.

1 *Of reaſons on the other ſide.*

2 *Of the Law of* Rome, *of asking the Senate leave to kill himſelfe.*

3 *Of the caſe upon that Law in* Quintillian.

Sect. 2.

1 *Compariſons of deſertion and deſtruction.*

2 *Of Omiſſions equall to committings.*

Sect. 3.

3 *In great faults the firſt ſtep imprints a guiltines, yet many ſteps to* ſelf-homicide *are allowable.*

4 Dracoes *lawes againſt* homicide *were retained for the hainouſnes of the fault.*

5 Tolets *five* Species *of* Homicide.

6 *Foure of thoſe were to be found in* Adams *firſt* Homicide *in Paradiſe.*

Sect. 4.

7 *Of* Tolets *firſt and ſecond* Species, *by Precept, and by Adviſe, or Option.*

8 *We may wiſh* Malum pœnæ *to our ſelves, as the Eremite prayed to be poſſeſſed.*

9 *That we may wiſh death for wearines of this life.*

10 *It is ſin to wiſh the evill were not evill, that then we might wiſh it.*

11 *Of wiſhing the Princes Death.*

12 *In many opinions by contrary Religion, a true King becomes a Tyrant.*

13 *Why an oath of fidelity to the Pope binds no man.*

14 *Who is a Tyrant by the declaration of the learned men of* France.

15 *How Death may be wiſhed by* Calvins *opinion.*
16 *How we may wiſh death to another for our own advantage.*
17 Phil. Nerius *conſented that one who wiſhed his own death might have his wiſh.*

Sect. 5.

1 *Of* Tolets *third* Species *of* Homicide, *by permiſſion, which is* Mors Negativa.
2 *Of ſtanding mute at the Barre.*
3 *Three Rules from* Scotus, Navar, *and* Maldonate, *to guide us in theſe deſertions of our ſelves.*
4 *That I may ſuffer a Theif to kill me, rather then kill him.*
5 *Of* Se defendendo *in our Law.*
6 *That I am not bound to eſcape from priſon if I can. Nor to eate, rather then ſtarve,*
7 *For ends better then this life we may neglect this.*
8 *That I may give my life for another.*
9 Chryſoſtomes *opinion of* Sarahs *lie, and her conſent to Adultery. And S.* Auguſtines *opinion of this, and of that wife, who proſtituted her ſelfe to pay her husbands debts.*
10 *That to give my life for another, is not to preferre another before my ſelfe, as* Bonaventure *and* Auguſt. *ſay; But to prefer vertue before life; which is lawfull.*
11 *For ſpirituall good it is without queſtion.*
12 *That I may give another that without which I cannot live.*
13 *That I may lawfully wear out my ſelf with faſting.*
14 *That this in* S. Hier. *opinion is* ſelfe-homicide.
15 *Of the Fryer whom* Caſſianus *calls a* Self-homicide, *for refuſing bread from a theife, upon an indiſcreet Vow.*
16 *Of Chriſts faſt.*
17 *Of Philoſophers inordinate faſts.*
18 *Of the Devils threatning S.* Francis, *for faſting.*
19 *Examples of long faſts.*
20 *Reaſons, effects, and obligations to rigorous faſtings.*

Corollary of this Section of Desertion.

Sect. 6.

1 *Of another* Species *of* homicide, *which is not in* Tolets *division by Mutilation.*

2 *Of Delivering ones selfe into bondage.*

3. *By divers Cannons* homicide *and mutilation is the same fault.*

4 *Of* Calvins *argument against Divorce, upon this ground of Mutilation.*

5 *The example of* S. Mark, *cutting off his thumbe to escape Priesthood*

6 *In what cases it is clear, that a man may maime himself.*

Sect. 7.

1 *Of* Tolets *fourth* Species *of* Homicide, *by actual helping.*

2 Ardoynus *reckons a flea amongst poysons, because it would destroy*

3 David *condemned the Amalekite, who said he had helped* Saul *to kill himselfe.*

4 Mariana *the Iesuite is of opinion, that a King which may be removed by poyson, may not be put to take it by his owne hands though ignorantly, for he doth then kill himself.*

5 *That a malefactor unaccused may accuse himself.*

6 *Of* Sansovins *relation of our custome at executions, and withdrawing the pillow in desperate cases.*

7 *Of breaking the leggs of men at executions, and of breaking the halter.*

8 *Of the forme of purgations used by* Moses *Law in cases of iealousy.*

9 *Of formes of Purgation called* Vulgares.

10 Charlemaine *brought in a new forme of purgation.*

11 *And* Britius *a Bishop, being acquitted before, extorted another purgation upon himselfe.*

12 *Both kindes of* Ordalium, *by water, and fire, in use here, till King* Johns *time.*

13 *In all these purgations, and in that by Battaile, the party himself assisted.*

14 *Exam-*

14 *Exumples of actuall helpers to their owne deſtruction in S.* Dorothæus *doctrine.*

15 *Of* Ioſeph *of* Arimathæa *his drinking of poyſon.*

16 *Of S.* Andrew *and S.* Lawrence.

17 *Caſuiſts not cleere whether a condemned man may doe the laſt act to his death.*

18 *But in caſes without condemnation, it is* ſub præcepto *to Prieſts, Curats, to goe to infected houſes.*

Sect. 8.

1 *Of* Tolets *laſt ſpecies of* Homi-cide *which is the act it ſelfe.*

2 *How farre an erring conſcience may juſtify this act.*

3 *Of* Pythagoras *philoſophicall conſcience, to dy, rather then hurt a Beane, or ſuffer his ſchollers to ſpeak.*

4 *Of the apparition to* Hero *a moſt devout Eremite, by which he killed himſelf, out of* Caſſianus.

5 *That the Devill ſometime ſollicites to good.*

6 *That by* Uaſques *his opinion, it is not Idolatry to worſhip God in the devil.*

7 *Rules given to diſtinguiſh evil ſpirits from God are all fallible.*

8 *Good Angels ſometimes move to that which is evill, being ordinarily and morally accepted.*

9 *As in miſ-adoration by* Vaſques, *invincible ignorance excuſes, ſo it may in our caſes.*

10 *Of S.* Auguſtines *firſt reaſon againſt* Donatus, *that we may ſave a mans life againſt his will.*

11 *Of his ſecond reaſons, which is want of examples of the faithfull. And of S.* Auguſtines *aſſured eſcape, if* Donatiſts *had produced Examples.*

12 *Divorce in* Rome *on either part, And in* Jury, *on the womans part long without example.*

13 *Saint* Auguſtines *Schollers in this point of examples, as ſtubborne as* Ariſtotles, *for the inalterableneſſe of the Heavens, though the reaſon of both be ceaſed.*

14 *Of the Martyr* Apollonia *who killed her ſelfe.*

15 *Of*

15 *Of answers in her excuse.*
16 *Of the Martyr* Pelagia *who killed her selfe.*
17 *Though her History bee very uncertaine, yet the Church seems glad of any occasion to celebrate such a fact.*
18 *Saint* Augustines *testimony of her.*
19 *Saint* Ambroses *Meditation upon her.*
20 Eusebius *his Oration incitatory, imagined in the person of the Mother.*
21 *Saint* Augustines *first of any doubting of their fact, sought such shifts to defend it, as it needed not.*
22 *S.* Augustines *example hath drawne* Pedraca *a Spanish Casuist, and many others, to that shift of speciall Divine inspiration, in such cases.*
23 *And so sayes* Peter Martyr *of the Midwives, and of* Rahabs *lye.*
24 *To preserve the Seale of Confession, a man may in some case be bound to doe the intire act of killing himselfe.*

The Third Part, which is of the Law of God.

Distinct. 1 Sect. 1.

1 *An introduction to the handling of these places of Scripture.*
2 *Why I forbeare to name them who cite these places of Scripture.*
3 *If any oppose an answer, why I intreat him to avoide bitternes.*
4 *Why Clergy men, which by Canons may fish, and hunt, yet may not hunt with dogs.*
5 *Of* Bezas *answer to* Ochius *Polygamy.*

Distinction 2. Sect. 1.

1 *No place against this* Self-homicide, *is produced out of the Iudiciall or Ceremoniall Law.*

Sect. 2 1 *Of the place* Gen. 9,5. I will require your blood.
2 *We are not bound to accept the interpretation of the Rabbins.*

3 *Of*

3 *Of* Lyra, *and of* Emmanuel Sâ, *both abounding in Hebraiſms, yet making no ſuch note upon this place,*

Sect. 3, 1 *Of the place* Deut. 33. 39. *I kill, and I give life.*

2 *Iuriſdiction of Parents, Huſbands, Maſters, Magiſtrates, muſt conſiſt with this place.*

3 *This place muſt be interpreted as the other places of Scripture, which have the ſame words. And from them, being three, no ſuch ſence can be extorted.*

Sect. 4. 1 *Of the place* Iob 7. 1. vita militia.

2 *Why they cite this place according to the vulgate copy.*

3 *Of Soldiers priviledges of abſence by Law.*

4 Iobs *ſcope is, That as warre works to peace, ſo heere we labour to death.*

5 *Of Chriſts letter to King* Abgarus.

Sect. 5. 1 *Of another place in* Iob 7. 15. *Anima elegit ſuſpendium.*

2 *Why it was not lawfull to* Iob *to kill himſelf.*

3 *His words ſeeme to ſhew ſome ſteps toward a purpoſe of* Self-homicide.

4 *Of* Sextus Senenſis, *and of* Gregories *expoſition therof*

5 *How I differ from the Anabaptiſts, who ſay that* Iob *deſpaired.*

6 *S.* Hierome, *and the Trent Councell incurre this erronr of condemning all which a condemned man ſays.*

7 *Very holy and learned men impute a more dangerous deſpaire to Chriſt, then I doe to* Iob.

Sect. 6. 1 *Of the place* Io. 2. 4. *Skin for Skin &c.*

Sect. 7 1 *Of the place* Eccles. 30. 16. *There is no riches above a ſound body.*

2 *This place is not of ſafety, but of health.*

Sect. 8. 1 *Of the place* Exod. 20. *Thou ſhalt not kill.*

2 S. Auguſtine *thinks this Law to concerne ones ſelf more directly, then another.*

3 *This Law hath many exceptions.*

4 *Laws of the firſt table are* ſtrictioris vinculi, *then of the ſecond.*

5 *A caſe wherein it is probable that a man muſt kill himſelf, if the perſon be exemplar.*

6 *As Laws againſt Day-theeves may be deduced from the Law of God authorizing Princes, So may this from the commandement, of preferring Gods glory.*

7 *Whatſoever might have been done before this Law, this Law forbids not.*

Sect. 9. 1 *Of the place* Wiſd. 1. 12. *Seek not death.*

Diſtinct. 3. Sect. 1.

1 *Of the place* Mat. 4. 6. *Caſt thy ſelf downe.*

2 *That Chriſt when it conduced to his owne ends, did as much, as the devill tempted him to, in this place.*

Sect. 2. 1 *Of the place* Acts 16. 17. *Do thy ſelf no harme.*

2 S. Paul *knew Gods purpoſe of baptizing the Iaylour.*

3 *For elſe ſaith Calvin, he had fruſtrated Gods way of giving him an eſcape by the Jaylours death.*

Sect. 3. 1 *Of the place* Rom. 3. 8. *Do not evill for good.*

2 *In what ſence* Paul *forbids this.*

3 *God always inflicts* malum pœnæ *by inſtruments.*

4 *Induration it ſelfe is ſometimes medicinall.*

5 *We may inflict upon our ſelves one diſeaſe, to remove another.*

6. *In things evill, in that ſenſe as S.* Paul *takes the word here, Popes daily diſpence.*

7 *So doe the Civill Lawes.*

8 *So doe the Cannons.*

9 *So doth God occaſion leſſe ſins to avoid greater.*

10 *What any other may diſpence withall in us, in caſes of extremity, we may diſpence with it our ſelves.*

11 *Yet no diſpenſation changes the nature of the thing, and therefore that particular thing was never evill.*

12 *The Law it ſelf, which meaſures actions, is neither good nor evill.*

13 *Which* Picus *notes well, comparing it to the firmament.*

14 *What*

14 *What evill S.* Paul *forbids here, and why.*
15 *Nothing which is once evil, can ever recover of that.*
16 *These Acts were in Gods decree preserved from those ſtains of circumſtances, which make things evill: So as Miracles were written in his book of Nature, though not in our copy thereof; and ſo, as our Lady is ſaid to be preſerved from Originall ſinne.*
17 *Of that kind was* Moſes *killing of the Egyptian.*
18 *If this place of* Paul, *be underſtood of all evill.*
19 *Yet it muſt admit exceptions, as well as the Decalogue it ſelfe.*
20 *Otherwiſe that application which* Bellarmine *and others doe make of it will be intollerable.*
Sect. 4. 1. *Of divers places which call us, Temples of God.*
2 *The dead are ſtill his Temples and Images.*
3 *Heathen Temples might be demoliſhed, yet the Soyle remained Sacred.*
4 *S.* Pauls *reaſon holds in caſes where we avile our bodies, here we advance them.*
5 *How we muſt underſtand that our body is not our own.*
Sect. 5. 1. *Of the place,* Eph. 4. 15. *One body with Chriſt.*
2 *This place gives Arguments to all which ſpare not themſelves for releif of others, and therefore cannot ſerve the contrary purpoſe.*
Sect. 6. 1. *Of the place* Eph. 5. *No man hates his own fleſh.*
2 *How* Marlorate *expounds this Hate.*
Diſtinct. 4. Sect. 1.
1 *Of the places of Scripture on the other part.*
2 *We may, but our Adverſaries may not make uſe of Examples. To which the anſwer of* Martyr *and* Lavater *is weake*
3 *The Nature, Degrees, and Effects of Charity.*
4 *S.* Auguſtines *deſcription of Her. Of her higheſt perfection beyond that which* Lombard *obſerved out of* Aug.
5 *He who loves God with all his heart, may love him more.*

6 *Any ſuffering in Charity, hath infallibly the grace of God; by* Aquin.

Sect. 2. 1. *Of the place* 1 Cor. 13. 4. *Though I give my Body.*

2 *By this, it was in common reputation, a high degree of perfection to die ſo, and Charity made it acceptable.*

3 *S.* Paul *ſpeaks of a thing which might lawfully be done, for ſuch are all his gradations in this Argument.*

4 *Tongues of Angels, in what ſenſe in this place.*

5 *Speech in the Aſſe, underſtandings of propheſies in* Iudas, *or miraculous faith, make not the poſſeſſour the better.*

6 *How I differ from the Donatiſts, arguing from this place, that in charity there* Self-Homicides *were alwayes lawfull.*

7 *To give my body, is more then to let it be taken.*

8 *How* Nicephorus *the Martyr gave his Body in* Sapritius *his roome who recanted.*

9 *There may be ſome caſe that a man who is bound to give his body, cannot doe it otherwiſe then by* ſelf-homicide.

Sect. 3. 1. *Of the place* Joh. 10. 11. *&* Joh. 15. 13. *The good Shepheard.*

2 *That a man is not bound to purge himſelf, if anothers crime be imputed to him.*

Sect. 4. 1 *Of the place* Ioh. 13. 37. *I will lay down my life.*

2 Peters *readines was naturall;* Pauls *deliberate.*

Sect. 5. 1. *Of the place* Ioh. 10. 15. *Of Chriſts example.*

2 *Why Chriſt ſpoke this in the preſent time.*

3 *Of the abundant charity of Chriſt.*

4 *Of his ſpeech going to* Emmaus.

5 *Of his Apparition to S.* Charles.

6 *Of the Revelation to S.* Brigid.

7 *Of his mothers charity.*

8 *That none could take away Chriſts ſoule.*

9 *His owne will the onely cauſe of his dying ſo ſoon by S.* Auguſtine.

10 *And by* Aquinas, *becauſe he had ſtill all his ſtrength.*

11 *And*

11 *And by* Marlorate *because he bowed his head, and it fell not, as ours do in death.*

12 *In what sense it is true that the Iewes put him to Death.*

13 *Of* Aquinas *opinion, and of* Silvesters *opinion of* Aquinas.

14 *Christ was so the cause of his death, as he is of his wetting, which might, and doth not shut the window when it rains.*

15 *Who imitated Christ in this actuall emission of the soul.*

16 *Upon what Reasons this manner of dying in Christ is called Heroique, and by like Epithets.*

17 *Christ is said to have done herein, as* Saul, *and* Appollonia, *and such.*

Sect. 6. 1. *Of the places* Ioh. 12. 25. Luc. 14. 26. *Of Hating this life.*

2. *Iesuits apply particularly this Hate.*

3. *If the place in the* Ephes. *No man hateth his flesh, be against* self-homicide, *this place must by the same reason be for it.*

4 *S.* Augustine *denying that this place justifies the Donatists, excludes not all cases.*

Sect. 7. *Of the place* 1 Ioh. 3. 16. *We ought to lay down our lives,* &c.

2 *All these places direct us to doe it so, as Christ did it, unconstrained.*

Sect. 8. 1. *Of the place* Phil. 1. 23. Cupio dissolvi.

2. *Of S.* Pauls *gradations to this wish, and of his correcting of it.*

Sect. 9. 1 *Of the place* Gal. 4. 15. *You would have plucked out your owne eyes.*

2 *This was more then* vitam profundere *by* Calvin.

Sect. 10. 1. *Of the place,* Rom. 9. 3. *Anathema.*

2 *That he wished herein* Damnation.

3 *That he considered not his Election at that time.*

Sect. 11. *Of the place*, Exod. 32. 32. Dele me de libro.
2 *That this imprecation was not onely to be blotted out of the Hiſtory of the Scripture as ſome ſay.*
3 *It was ſtranger that Chriſt ſhould admit that which might ſeeme a ſlip downward, when he wiſht an eſcape from death, then that* Moſes *ſhould have ſuch an exaltation upward, as to ſave his Nation by periſhing, yet both without inordinateneſſe.*
4 *How by* Paulinus, *a juſt man may ſafely ſay to God,* Dele me.

Diſtinct. 5. Sect. 1.
1 *Of Examples in Scripture.*
2 *The phraſe of Scripture never imputes this Act to any as a ſinne, when it relates the Hiſtory.*
3 Irenæus *forbids man to accuſe where God doth not.*
4 Beza *his anſwer to* Ochius *reaſon, that ſome Patriarchs lived in Polygamy, reaches not home to our caſe.*
5 *For it is not evident by any other place of Scripture, that this is ſinne, and here many examples contur.*
Sect. 2. 1 *Examples of Acts which were not fully* ſelfe-homicides, *but approaches.*
2 *Of the Prophet who puniſhed him that would not ſtrike him.*
3 *That when God doth eſpecially invite men to ſuch violence, he ſays ſo plainly. And therefore ſuch particular invitations may not be preſumed where they are not expreſſed.*
Sect. 3. 1 *Of* Jonas.
2 *Why S.* Hierome *calls only* Jonas *of all the Prophets holy.*
Sect. 4. 1 *Of* Samſon.
2 *The Church celebrates him as a Martyr.*
3 Paulinus *wiſhes ſuch a death as* Samſons.
4 *They which deny that he meant to kill himſelf, are confuted by the text.*
5 *They which ſay, he intended not his owne death principally, ſay the ſame as we doe.* 6 *That*

6 *That S.* Auguſtines *anſwer to this fact, that it was by ſpeciall inſtinct, hath no ground in the hiſtory.*

7 *Of* Sayr *his reaſon, in confirmation of* Auguſtine, *That* Samſon *prayed.*

8 *Of* Pedraca *his reaſon, that it was therefore the work of God, becauſe God effected it ſo, as it was deſired.*

9 *That he had as much reaſon, and as much authority to kill himſelfe, as to kill the Philiſtims. And that was only the glory of God.*

10 *That in this manner of dying, hee was a type of Chriſt.*

Sect. 5. 1 *Of* Saul.

2 *Whether the Amalekite did helpe to kill* Saul. *Whether* Saul *be ſaved or no.*

3 *In what caſes the Iewes, and* Lyra *confeſſe, that a man may kill himſelfe.*

4 Lyra's *reaſons why* Saul *is to be preſumed to have dyed well.*

5 Burgenſis *reaſon to the contrary ; That if* Saul *were excuſable, the Amalekite was ſo too, is of no force.*

5 *Of* Sauls *Armour-bearer.*

Sect. 6. 1 *Of* Achitophel.

2 *He ſet his houſe in order, and he was buried.*

Sect. 7. 1 *Of* Judas.

2 *He dyed not by hanging in the opinion of* Euthymius, Oecumenius, Papias *S.* Johns *diſciple, and* Theophilact.

3 *By what meanes many places of Scripture have been generally otherwiſe accepted, then the text enforceth.*

4 Judas *not accuſed of this in the ſtory, nor in the two Propheticall Pſalmes of him.*

5 Origens *opinion of his repentance.*

6 Calvin *acknowledgeth all degrees of Repentance, which the Romane Church requires to Salvation to have been in* Judas.

7 Petilians *opinion that* Judas *was a Martyr.*

8 *His Act had ſome degrees of Iuſtice, by S.* Auguſt.

Sect. 8. 1 *Of* Eleazar. 2 *All*

2 *All confesse that it was an Act of vertue.*
3 *His destruction was certaine to him.*
4 *He did as much to his owne death, as* Samson.
5 *The reasons of this Act, alleadged in the Text, are Morall.*
6 *Saint* Ambrose *extols this by many concurrences.*
7. Cajetans *reason for justification thereof, is appliable to very many other cases of* Selfe-homicide.
Sect. 9. 1 *Of* Rasis.
2 *His reasons in the Text Morall.*
3 *Whether it be Pusillanimity, as* Aristotle, Augustine *and* Aquinas *urge.*
4 *Saint* Augustine *confesseth that in* Cleombrotus *it was greatnesse of minde.*
5 *How much great Examples governe.*
6 *That it was reputed Cowardlinesse in* Antisthenes, *being extremely sicke, not to kill himselfe.*
7 *Vpon what reasons* Lyra *excuses this, and like actions.*
8 Burgensis *his reason confesseth that there might have beene just causes for this act.*

Conclusion

1 *Why I refrained discourse of destiny herein.*
2 *Man made of shadow, and the Devill of fire by the* Alcoran.
3 *Our adversaries reasons contradict one another.*
4 *No precept given of loving our selves.*
5 *Encouragemens to contempt of death.*
6 *Why I abstaine from particular directions.*
7 *Laws forbid ordinary men to cure by extraordinary meanes, yet Kings o* England, Fra. *and* Spaine *doe it.*
8 *As* Hierom Origen Chrysost. *and* Cassianus *are excused for following* Plato, *in toleration of a ly, because the church had not then pronounced; so may it be in this.*

THE

THE PREFACE

Declaring the Reaſons, the Purpoſe, the way, and the end *of the AVTHOR.*

BEZA, A man as eminent and illuſtrious, in the full glory and Noone of Learning, as others were in the dawning, and Morning, when any, the leaſt ſparkle was notorious, (a) confeſſeth of himſelf, that only for the anguiſh of a Scurffe, which over-ranne his head, he had once drown'd himſelfe from the Millers bridge in *Paris*, if his Uncle by chance had not then come that way; I have often ſuch a ſickely inclination. And, whether it be, becauſe I had my firſt breeding and converſation with men of a ſuppreſſed and afflicted Religion, accuſtomed to the deſpite of death, and hungry of an imagin'd Martyrdome; Or that the common Enemie find that doore worſt locked againſt him in mee:

1. The reaſon of this diſcourſe.

a *Epiſt. ante confeſſionem.*

Or that there bee a perplexitie and flexibility in the doctrine it ſelfe; Or becauſe my Conſcience ever aſſures me, that no rebellious grudging at Gods gifts, nor other ſinfull concurrence accompanies theſe thoughts in me, or that a brave ſcorn, or that a faint cowardlineſſe beget it, whenſoever any affliction aſſailes me, mee thinks I have the keyes of my priſon in mine owne hand, and no remedy preſents it ſelfe ſo ſoone to my heart, as mine own ſword. Often Meditation of this hath wonne me to a charitable interpretation of their action, who dy ſo: and provoked me a little to watch and exagitate their reaſons, which pronounce ſo peremptory judgements upon them.

Incitements to charity towards the doer.

(b) A devout and godly man, hath guided us well, and rectified our uncharitableneſſe in ſuch caſes, by this remembrance, [*Scis lapſum, &c. Thou knoweſt this mans fall, but thou knoweſt not his wraſtling; which perchance was ſuch, that almoſt his very fall is juſtified and accepted of God.*] For, to this end, ſaith one, (c) [*God hath appointed us tentations, that we might have ſome excuſes for our ſinnes, when he calles us to account*]

b *B. Dorotheus doctrin. 6.*

c *Boſq. conc 2.*

An uncharitable miſinterpreter unthriftily demoliſhes his own houſe, and repaires not another. He loſeth without any gaine or profit to any. And, as (d) *Tertullian* comparing and making equall him which provokes another, and him who will be provoked by another, ſayes, [*There is no difference, but that the provoker offended firſt, And that is nothing, becauſe in evill there is no reſpect*

d *lib. de patientia.*

reſpect of Order or Priority] So wee may ſoone become as ill as any offendor, if we offend in a ſevere increpation of the fact. For, (e) *Climachus* in his *Ladder of Paradiſe*, places theſe two ſteps very neere one another, when hee ſayes, [*Though in the world it were poſſible for thee, to eſcape all defiling by actuall ſinne, yet by judging and condemning thoſe who are defiled, thou art defiled.*] In this thou art defiled, as (f) *Baſil* notes, [*That in comparing others ſinnes, thou canſt not avoid excuſing thine owne*] Eſpecially this is done, if thy zeale be too fervent in the reprehenſion of others: For, as in moſt other Accidents, ſo in this alſo, Sinne hath the nature of Poyſon, that (g) [*It enters eaſieſt, and works faſteſt upon cholerique conſtitutions.*] It is good counſell of the Phariſes ſtiled, (h) [*Ne judices proximum donec ad ejus locum pertingas.* Feele and wraſtle with ſuch tentations as he hath done, and thy zeale will be tamer. For, [(i) *Therefore* (ſaith the Apoſtle) *it became Chriſt to be like us, that he might be mercifull.*]

If therefore after a Chriſtian proteſtation of an innocent purpoſe herein, And after a ſubmiſſion of all which is ſaid, not only to every Chriſtian Church, but to every Chriſtian man, and after an entreaty, that the Reader will follow this adviſe of *Tabæus*, [(k) *Qui litigant, ſint ambo in conſpectu tuo mali & rei*, and truſt neither me, nor the adverſe part, but the Reaſons, there be any ſcandall in this enterpriſe of mine, it is Taken, not Given. And though I know, that the

e *Scala paradiſ. grad.* 3.

f *In quæſt. fuſe diſp. ad q.* 6.

g *Foreſt. de venen. not. in obſervat.* 2.

h *Serar. Trihæreſ. l.* 2. *cap.* 17.

i *Heb.* 2. 17.

Incitements to charity toward the Author.

k *Serar. Trihæreſ. l.* 2. *cap.* 17.

malitious prejudged man, and the lazy affectors of ignorance, will uſe the ſame calumnies and obtreſtations toward me, (for the voyce and ſound of the Snake and Gooſe is all one) yet becauſe I thought, that as in the poole of *Bethſaida*, (l) there was no health till the water was troubled, ſo the beſt way to finde the truth in this matter, was to debate and vexe it, (for (m) [*We muſt as well diſpute* de veritate, *as* pro veritate,]) I abſtained not for feare of miſ-interpretation from this undertaking. Our ſtomachs are not now ſo tender, and queaſie, after ſo long feeding upon ſolid Divinity, nor we ſo umbragious and ſtartling, having been ſo long enlightned in Gods path, that wee ſhould thinke any truth ſtrange to us, or relapſe into that childiſh age, in which (n) a Councell in *France* forbad *Ariſtotles Metaphyſiques*, and puniſhed with Excommunication the excribing, reading, or having that booke.

l *Io.* 5. 2.

m *Athenag. de reſur.*

Why it is not inconvenient now to handle this point.

n *Fileſacus de authorit. Epiſ. cap.* 1. § 7.

Contemplative and bookiſh men, muſt of neceſſitie be more quarrelſome then others, becauſe they contend not about matter of fact, nor can determine their controverſies by any certaine witneſſes, nor judges. But as long as they goe towards peace, that is Truth, it is no matter which way. (o) The tutelare Angels reſiſted one another in *Perſia*, but neither reſiſted Gods revealed purpoſe. (p) *Hierome* and *Gregorie* ſeem to be of opinion, that *Salomon* is damned; *Ambroſe* and *Auguſtine*, that he is ſaved: All Fathers, all

Diſſentions among ſcholars more and harder to end then others.

o *Dan.* 10.

p *Humf. Ieſui. part.* 2. *ad rat.* 5

all zealous of Gods glory. (q) At the ſame time when the *Romane* Church canonized *Becket*, the Schooles of *Paris* diſputed whether hee could be ſaved; both Catholique Judges, and of reverend authoritie. And after ſo many Ages of a devout and religious celebrating the memory of Saint *Hierome*, *Cauſæus* hath ſpoken ſo dangerouſly, that (r) *Campian* ſaies, hee pronounces him to be as deepe in hell as the Devill. But in all ſuch intricacies, where both opinions ſeem equally to conduce to the honor of God, I is Juſtice being as much advanced in the one, as his Mercie in the other, it ſeemes reaſonable to me, that this turne the ſcales, if on either ſide there appeare charity towards the poore ſoule departed. (ſ) The Church in her Hymnes and Antiphones, doth often ſalute the Nayles and Croſſe, with Epithets of ſweetneſſe, and thanks; But the Speare which pierced Chriſt when he was dead, it ever calles, *dirum Mucronem.*

This pietie, I proteſt againe, urges me in this diſcourſe; and what infirmity ſoever my reaſons may have, yet I have comfort in *Treſmegiſtus* Axiome, (t) [*Qui pius eſt, ſummè Philoſophatur.*] And therefore without any diſguiſing, or curious and libellous concealing, I preſent and object it, to all of candor, and indifferencie, to eſcape that juſt taxation (u) [*Novum malitiæ genus eſt, & intemperantis, ſcribere quod occultes.*] For as, (x) when *Ladiſlaus* tooke occaſion of the great ſchiſme, to corrupt the Nobility in *Rome*, and hoped

q *ejuſd. part 1. præfat. ad Com. Leiceſt.*

r *Ratio 5.*
n Such perplexities wee ought to enclin to that ſide that favoureth the dead.

ſ *Notæ Mallon. in Palcot. Sin. part. 1. cap. 2.*

t *De pietate et philoſophia.* Why I make it ſo publique.

u *Hier. Apol. adverſ. Ruffin.*

x *Theodor. a Niem. l. 2. c. 37.*

ped thereby to poſſeſſe the Towne, to their ſeven Governours whom they called *Sapientes*, they added three more, whom they called *Bonos* and confided in them; So doe I wiſh, and and as much as I can, effect, that to thoſe many learned and ſubtile men which have travelled in this point, ſome charitable and compaſſionate men might be added.

y *Teſtrid. 6.* What reader I wiſh.

If therefore, of Readers, which (y) *Gorionides* obſerves to be of foure ſorts, (Spunges which attract all without diſtinguiſhing; Howre-glaſſes, which receive and powre out as faſt; Bigges, which retaine onely the dregges of the Spices, and let the Wine eſcape; And Sives, which retaine the beſt onely,) I finde ſome of the laſt ſort, I doubt not but they may bee hereby enlightened. And (z) as the eyes of *Eve*, were opened by the taſte of the Apple, though it bee ſaid before that ſhee ſaw the beauty of the tree, So the digeſting of this may, though not preſent faire objects, yet bring them to ſee the nakedneſſe and deformity of their owne reaſons, founded upon a rigorous ſuſpition, and winne them to be of that temper, which (a) *Chriſoſtome* commends, [*He which ſuſpects benignly would faine be deceived, and bee overcome. and is pouſly glad, when he findes it to be falſe, which he drawncharitably ſuſpect.*] And it may have as much vigour (as (b) one obſerves of another Author) as the Sunne in *March*; it may ſtirre and diſſolve humors, though not expell them; for that

z *Gen. 3. 6. et 7.*

a *Hom. de S. Suſanna.*

b *Steuch. de Valla de Don. conſt.*

that muſt bee a worke of a ſtronger power.

Every branch which is excerpted from other authors, and engrafted here, is not written for the readers faith, but for illuſtration and compariſon. Becauſe I undertooke the declaration of ſuch a propoſition as was controverted by many, and therefore was drawne to the citation of many authorities, I was willing to goe all the way with company, and to take light from others, as well in the iourney as at the journeys end. If therefore in multiplicity of not neceſſary citations there appeare vanity, or oſtentation, or digreſſion my honeſty muſt make my excuſe and compenſation, who acknowledg as (c) *Pliny* doth [*That to chuſe rather to be taken in a theft, then to give every man due, is* obnoxii animi, et infelicis ingenii.] I did it the rather becauſe ſcholaſtique and artificiall men uſe this way of inſtructing; and I made account that I was to deale with ſuch, becauſe I preſume that naturall men are at leaſt enough inclinable of themſelves to this doctrine.

The reaſon of ſo many citations.

c *Epiſt. Tit. Veſp.*

This my way; and my end is to remove ſcandall. For certainly God often puniſheth a ſinner much more ſeverely, becauſe others have taken occaſion of ſinning by his fact. If therefore wee did correct in our ſelves this eaſines of being ſcandalized, how much eaſier and lighter might we make the puniſhment of many tranſgreſſors? for God in his judgements hath almoſt made us his aſſiſtants, and counſellers, how far he ſhall puniſh; and our interpretation of anothers ſinne doth

God puniſhes that ſinn moſt which occaſions moſt ſinne in others.

doth often give the measure to Gods Justice or Mercy.

If therefore, since (d) [*disorderly long haire which was pride and wantonnesse in* Absolon, *and squallor and horridnes in* Nebuchodonozor, *was vertue and strength in* Samson, *and sanctification in* Samuel,] these severe men will not allow to indifferent things the best construction they are capable of, nor pardon my inclination to do so, they shall pardon this opinion, that their severity proceeds from a self-guiltines, and give me leave to apply that of *Ennodius*, (e) [*That it is the nature of stiffe wickednesse, to think that of others, which themselves deserve, and it is all the comfort which the guilty have, not to find any innocent.*]

d *Paulin. Ep. 4. Severo.*

e *Epist. ad Asyrium.*

THE

THE FIRST PART OF *LAW* and *NATURE*.

Diſtinction I.

SECT. I.

AS (a) Lawyers uſe to call that impoſſible, which is ſo difficult; that by the rules of law it cannot be afforded, but by the indulgence of the Prince, and excerciſe of his Prerogative: So Divines are accuſtomed to call that ſinne, which for the moſt part is ſo, and which naturally occaſions and accompanies ſinne. Of ſuch condition is this SELF-HO-

1. Why wee firſt prove that this ſinne is not irremiſſible.

a *Palæotus de notbis. c.* 28.

HOMICIDE: which to be ſinne every body hath ſo ſucked, and digeſted, and incorporated into the body of his Faith and Religion, that now they preſcribe againſt any oppoſer; and all diſcourſe in this point is upon the degrees of this ſinne, and how farre it exceeds all other: So that none brings the metall now to the teſt, nor touch, but onely to the balance. Therefore although whatſoever is in our appetite good or bad, was firſt in our underſtanding true or falſe, and therefore if wee might proceed orderly, our firſt diſquiſition ſhould be employd upon the firſt ſource, and origen, which is, whether this opinion be true or falſe, yet finding our ſelves under the iniquity and burden of this cuſtome, and preſcription, we muſt obey the neceſſitie, and preposterouſly examine: Firſt, why this fact ſhould be ſo reſolutely condemned, and why there ſhould be this precipitation in our judgement, to pronounce this above all other ſins irremiſſible: and then, having removed that which was neereſt us, and delivered our ſelves from the tyranny of this prejudice: our judgment may be brought neerer to a ſtraightneſſe, and our charity awakned, and entendred to apprehend, that this act may be free not onely from thoſe enormous degrees of ſinne, but from all.

SECT. II.

1. Three ſorts of miſtakers of this ſinne.

They who pronounce this ſinne to be ſo neceſſarily

farily damnable, are of one of these three perswasions. Either they mis-affirme that this act alwaies proceeds from desperation; and so they load it with all those comminations with which from Scriptures, Fathers, Histories, that common place abounds. Or else they entertaine that dangerous opinion, that there is in this life an impenitibleneſſe, and impoſſibilitie of returning to God, and that apparent to us (for else it could not justifie our uncharitable censure;) Or else they build upon this foundation, that this act being presum'd to be sinne, and all sinne unpardonable without repentance, this is therefore unpardonable, because the very sin doth preclude all ordinary wayes of repentance.

SECT. III.

To those of the first Sect, if I might be as vainly subtile, as they are uncharitably severe, I should answer, that all desperation is not sinnefull. For in the devill it is not sinne, nor doth hee demerit by it, because he is not commanded to hope. Nor in a man which undertook an austere and disciplinary taming of his body by fasts or corrections, were it sinfull to despaire that God would take from him *stimulum carnis*. Nor in a Priest employ'd to convert infidels, were it sinfull to despaire; that God would give him the power of miracles; If therefore to quench and extinguish this *stimulum carnis*, a man should kill himselfe;

1. That all desperation is not hainous; and that this act doth not alwaies proceed from desperation.

the effect and fruit of this desperation were evil, and yet the root it selfe not necessarily so. No detestation nor dehortation against this sinne of desperation when it is a sinne) can be too earnest. But yet (a) since it may be without infidelitie, it cannot be greater then that. And though *Aquinas* there calls it sinne truly, yet he sayes hee doth so, because it occasions many sinnes. And if it bee as (b) others affirme, *Pœna peccati*, it is then *involuntarium*, which will hardly consist with the nature of sinne: Certainly, though many devout men have justly imputed to it the cause and effect of sin, yet as in the (c) penitentiall Cannons, greater Penance is inflicted upon one who kills his wife, than one who kills his mother; and the reason added, not that the fault is greater, but that otherwise more would commit it; So is the sinne of desperation so earnestly aggravated; because springing from Sloth, and Pusillanimity, our nature is more slippery and inclinable to such a descent, than to presumptions, which yet without doubt do more wound and violate the Majesty of God, then desperation doth. But howsoever, that none may justly say, that all which kill themselves, have done it out of a despaire of Gods mercy, (which is the onely sinnefull despaire) we shall in a more proper place, when we come to consider the examples exhibited in Scriptures, and other Histories; finde many who at that act have been so far from despaire, that they have esteemed it a great degree of Gods mercy,

2. It may bee without infidelitie.

a *Tho.* 2 2. *q.* 2. *ar.* 2.

3 When it is *pœna peccati* it is *involuntarium.*

b *Perer. Exod. c.* 1. *disp.* 4.

4. The reason why men ordinarily aggravate it.

c *Can.* 17.

to

to have been admitted to ſuch a glorifying of his name, and have proceeded therein as religiouſly as in a ſacrifice; and as (d) one ſayes, elegantly, of *Job*, *venere in glorioſa Proverbia*, and of whom we may properly ſay, that which *Moſes* ſaid, when they puniſhed upon one another their Idolatry, *Conſecraſtis manus veſtras Domino.*

d *Boſquier Con.* 2. *Exod.* 32. 29.

When I come to conſider their words who are of the ſecond opinion, and which allow an impenitibleneſſe in this life (of which *Calvin* is a ſtrong Authorizer, if not an Authour; who ſayes, that actuall impenitence is not the ſinne intimated in *Matth.* 12. 30, & 31. But it is a willing reſiſting of the holy Ghoſt, into which whoſoever falls, *Tenendum eſt*, ſaith he, we muſt hold that he never riſeth again) becauſe theſe hard and miſ-interpretable words fall from them, when they are perplexed, and intricated with that heavy queſtion of ſinne, againſt the holy Ghoſt, and becauſe I preſume them to ſpeak proportionally and analogally to their other Doctrine, I rather incline to afford them this conſtruction, that they place this impenitibleneſſe onely in the knowledge of God, or that I underſtand them not, then either beleeve them literally, or beleeve that they have clearly expreſſed their own meanings. For I ſee not why we ſhould be lother to allow, that God hath made ſome impeccable, then impenitible. Neither do I perceive, that if they had their purpoſe, and this were granted to them, that therfore ſuch an impenitibleneſſe muſt of neceſſity

5. Of the ſecond opinion, impenitibleneſſe.

6. Of *Calvins* opinion, *Mat.* 12. 30.

7. None impeccable, nor impenitible.

be concluded to have been in this person, by reason of this act.

SECT. IIII.

1. Of the third sort, and that we ought not to presume actuall impenitence in this case.

But the third sort is the tamest of all the three, and gives greatest hope of being reduced, and rectifyed: For though they pronounce severely upon the fact, yet it is onely upon one reason, that the fact precludes all entrance to repentance. Wherein I wonder why they should refuse to apply their opinions to the milder rules of the Casuists (a) which ever in doubtfull cases, teach an inclination to the safer side. And though it be safer to thinke a thing to be sin, then not, yet that rule serves for your own information, and for a bridle to you, not for anothers condemnation. They use to interpret that rule of taking the safer side, that in things necessary (*necessitate finis*, as repentance is to salvation) wee must follow any probable opinion, though another bee more probable; and that, directly that opinion is to be followed, *Quæ favet animæ*: which they exemplifie thus. (b) That though all Doctors hold that baptisme of a childe not yet throughly born, in the hand or foot to be ineffectuall, yet all Doctors counsell to baptize in that case, & to beleeve of good effect. And the example of the good theife informes us, that repentance works immediately; and from that history *Calvin* collects, That such paine *in articulo mortis*, is naturally apt to

a *Azor. Mor. Instit. pa.* 1. *l.* 2. *c.* 16.

2. Which is the safer side in doubts.

b *Zambran. de pœniten. dub.* 2. *n.* 39.

3. *In articulo mortis*, the Church interprets ever favourably.

to beget repentance; Since the Church is so indulgent, and liberall to her children, (c) that at the point of death shee will afford her treasure of baptisme to one which hath been mad from his birth, by the same reason as to a child; (d) yea, to one fallen lately into madnesse, though it appeare he were in mortall sinne, if he have but attrition, which is but a feare of hell, & no tast of Gods glory; And such attrition shall be presum'd to be in him, if nothing appeare evidently to the contrary: (e) If she be content to extend and interpret this point of death, of every danger by sea, or travell; (f) If she will interpret any mortall sinne, in a man provoked by sodain passion, and proceeding from indeliberation, to be no worse nor of greater malignity, then the act of a childe. If being unable to succour one before (g) she will deliver him from excommunication after he is dead. (h) If she bee content that both the penitent and confessor, bee but *diligentes*, not *diligentissimi*; (i) If rather then she will be frustrate of her desire to dispense her treasure, she yeelds that mad and possessed men, shall be bound till they may receive extreame unction. (k) If lastly she absolve some whether they will or no, why should we abhorre our mothers example, and being brethren, be severer than the Parent? Not to pray for them which dye without faith is a precept so obvious to every Religion, that even (l) *Mahomet* hath inhibited it: But to presume impenitence, because you were not by, and heard it, is an usurpation.

This

c *Idem de bap. dub. 8. n. 1.*

d *Ibid. n. 2.*

e *Idem prælud. 1. n. 7.*

f *Idem de pœnitent. dub. 3. nu. 2.*

g *Ibidem.*

h *Dub. 7. nu. 9.*

i *Idem de unct. dub. 2. nu. 3.*

k *Suyr Thesaur cas. consci. tom. 1. l. 2. c. 21. nu. 2.*

l *Alcor. azoar. 19.*

4. What true repentance is.

This is true repentance (ſaith *Clement*) [(m) To doe no more, and to ſpeake no more, thoſe things, whereof you repent; and not to be ever ſinning, and ever asking pardon.] Of ſuch a repentance as this our caſe is capable enough.

m *Stromat. l.* 2

n *Lib.* 3. *ad Amandum. ep.* 1.

And of (n) one who died before he had repented, good *Paulinus* would charitably interpret his haſte, [That he choſe rather to go to God *debitor quam liber*] and ſo to die in his debt rather than to carry his acquittance. As therefore in matters of fact, the delinquent is ſo much favor'd that (o) a Lay-man ſhall ſooner be beleeved which acquits him, then a Clerk which accuſeth (though in (p) other caſes there be much diſproportion betweene the value of theſe two teſtimonies;) So, if any will of neceſſitie proceede to judgement in our caſe, thoſe reaſons, which are moſt benigne, and which, (as I ſayd) *favent animæ*, ought to have the beſt acceptation and entertainment.

5. Witneſſes which acquit, more acceptable then accuſers.

o *Dist.* 81. *ca. Clerici.*

p 12. *q.* 1. *c. duo ſunt.*

SECT. V.

1. Why wee wave the ordinary definition of ſinne taken from S. *Auguſtine*, and follow that of *Aquinas.*

Of all thoſe definitions of ſinne, which the firſt Rhapſoder *Pet. Lombard* hath preſented out of ancient learning, as well the *Summiſts* as *Caſuiſts* doe moſt inſiſt upon that which he brings from (a) S. *Auguſtine*, as, commonly, where that Father ſerves their turnes, they never goe further: This definition is, that ſinne is *dictum, factum, concupitum, contrà æternam legem Dei.* This they ſtick too, becauſe this definition (if it be one) beſt beares their deſcant

a *Lib.* 2. *Dist.* 35. *A.*

scant; and is the easiest conveyance, and cariage, and vent for their conceptions; and applying rules of Divinitie to particular cases: by which they have made all our actions perplex'd and litigious, in *foro interiori*, which is their tribunall: by which torture they have brought mens consciences to the same reasons of complaint, which (b) *Pliny* attributes to *Rome*, till *Trajans* time; that *Civitas funaata legibus, legibus evertebatur*. For as Informers vext them with continuall delations upon penall Lawes, so doth this act of sinning entangle wretched consciences in manifold and desperate anxieties.

Of the torturing practise of Casuists.

b *Panegyr. Traian.*

But for this use this definition cannot be thought to be applyable to sinne onely, since it limits it to the externall Law of God, (which word though *Lombard* have not, (c) *Sayr* and all the rest retain) for this eternall Law is (d) *ratio gubernativa Dei*, which is no other then his eternall decree for the government of the whole world, and that is Providence. And certainly against this, because it is not alwayes revealed, a man may without sinne both think and speak and doe: as I may resist a disease, of which God hath decreed I shall die. Yea though he seeme to reveale his will, we may resist it, with prayers against it, because it is often conditioned, and accompanied with limitations and exceptions. Yea though God dealt plainly by *Nathan*, (e) [*The child shall surely die*] *David* resisted Gods decree by prayer and penance. We must therefore seek another definition of sinne

c *Thesaur. Cas. Consc. l. 1. Ca. 5.*
d *Tho. 22. q. 91. ar. 2.*

3. Of the eternall law of God in *Augustines* definition against which a man may doe without sinne.

e *2. Sam. 12. 14.*

which I think is not so well delivered in those words of *Aquinas* (f) [*Omnis defectus debiti actus habet rationem peccati*] as in his other; [*Peccatum est actus devians ab ordine debiti finis, contra regulam naturæ rationis, aut legis æternæ.*] For here *lex æterna* being put as a member and part of the definition, it cannot admit that vast and large acceptation, which it could not escape in the description of S. *Augustine* but must in this place be necessarily intended of *lex divina*. Through this definition therefore, we will trace this act of *Self-homicide*, and see whether it offend any of those three sorts of Law.

f 22. q. 64. ar. 1. Con. 4. Of the Definition which we follow.

SECT. VI.

1. How the law of nature, of reason, and of God, exhibited in this definition, are all one; and how diversly accepted.

Of all these three Laws, of Nature, of Reason, and of God, every precept which is permanent, and binds alwayes, is so compos'd and elementedand complexion'd, that to distinguish and seperate them is a Chymick work: And either it doth only seeme to be done, or is done by the torture and vexation of schoole-limbicks, which are exquisite and violent distinctions. For that part of Gods Law which bindes alwayes, bound before it was written, and so it is but *dictamen rectæ rationis*; and that is the Law of nature. And therefore *Isidore* as it is related into the (a) Canons, dividing all Law into divine and humane, addeth [Divine consists of nature, Humane of custome] Yet though these three be almost all one; yet because

a *Dist.* 1. *Omnes.*

cause one thing may be commanded divers waies, and by divers authorities, as the common Law, a Statute, and a Decree of an arbitrary Court, may bind me to do the same thing, it is necessary that we weigh the obligation of every one of these Laws which are in the Definition.

But first I will only mollify and prepare their crude and undigested opinions and prejudice which may be contracted from the often iteration, and specious but sophisticate inculcatings of Law, and Nature, and Reason, and God, with this Antidote, that many things which are of Naturall and Humane and Divine Law may be broken. Of which sort (b) to conceale a secret delivered unto you is one. And the Honour due to Parents is so strictly of all these Laws, as none of the second Table more. Yet in a iust warre a Parricide is not guilty; yea by a law of *Venice*, though (c) *Bodin* say, it were better the Towne were sunk then ever there should be any example or president therein; A sonne shall redeeme himselfe from banishment by killing his Father being also banished. And we (d) read of another state (and Laws of Civil Commonwealths may not easily be pronounced to be against Nature) where when Fathers came to be of an unprofitable and useless age, the sons must beat them to death with clubs: And of another, where all persons of above 70 years were dispatched.

2. In some cases all these three lawes may be broke at once.

3. Revealing a secret.
b *Soto de teg. Secr. membr.* 1. *q.* 2.

4. Parricide.
c *de Rep. l.* 1. *cap.* 4.

d *Ælian. l.* 4. *cap.* 1.

SECT. VII.

1. Of the law, of nature; and that against it strictly taken, either no sin, or all sinne is done.

2. To doe against nature, makes us not guilty of a greater sinne, but more inexcusable.

3. Nothing so evill, that is never good.

4. No evill but disobedience.

5. Lying naturally worse then Selfe-homicide.

This terme the law of Nature, is so variously and unconstantly deliver'd, as I confesse I read it a hundred times before I understand it once, or can conclude it to signifie that which the author should at that time meane. Yet I never found it in any sence which might justifie their vociferations upon sinnes against nature. For the transgressing of the Law of nature in any act doth not seeme to me to increase the haynousnesse of that act, as though nature were more obligatory than divine Law: but only in this respect it aggravates it, that in such a sin we are inexcusable by any pretence of ignorance since by the light of nature we might discern it. Many things which we call sin, and so evill have been done by the commandement of God; by *Abraham* and the *Israelites* in their departing from *Ægypt*. So that this evill is not in the nature of the thing, nor in the nature of the whole harmony of the world, and therefore in no Law of nature, but in violating, or omitting a Commandement: All is obedience or disobedience. Whereupon our Country-man (a) *Sayr* confesseth, that this SELF-HOMICIDE is not so intrinsecally ill, as to Ly. Which is also evident by *Cajetan* (b) where he affirmes, that I may not to save my life, accuse my self upon the Racke. And though *Cajetan* extend no farther herein, then that I may not bely my self: Yet (c) *Soto* evicts,

a *Thesaur. cas. conf. l. 7. c. 9. n. 9.*
b *sup. 22. q. 37. ar. 2.*
c *de teg. secr. memb. 1. q. 3.*

evicts, that *Cajetans* reaſons, with as much force forbid any accuſation of my ſelf, though it be true. So much eaſier may I depart with life then with truth, or with fame, by *Cajetan*. And yet we find that of their fame many holy men have been very negligent. For not onely *Auguſtine*, *Anſelm*, and *Hierome*, betray themſelves by unurged confeſſions, but (d) St *Ambroſe* procur'd certain proſtitute women, to come into his chamber, that by that he might be defamed, and the People thereby abſtaine from making him Biſhop. This intrinſique and naturall evill therefore will hardly be found. For, (e) God who can command a murder, cannot command an evill, or a ſinne; becauſe the whole frame and government of the world being his, he may vſe it as he will. As, though he can doe a miracle, he can do nothing againſt nature; becauſe (f) [That is the nature of every thing, which he works in it.] Hereupon, & upon that other true rule, (g [whatſoever is wrought by a ſuperior Agent, upon a patient, who is naturally ſubject to that Agent, is naturall] we may ſafely infer, that nothing which we call ſinne is ſo againſt nature, but that it may be ſometimes agreeable to nature.

On the other ſide, nature is often taken ſo widely and ſo extenſively, as all ſinne is very truely ſaid to be againſt nature. Yea, before it come to be ſinne. For S. *Auguſtine* ſayes (h) [Every vice, as it is vice, is againſt nature.] And vice is but habite which being produced to act, is then ſinne. Yea

6 Fame may be neglected; yet we are as much bound to preſerve it, as life.

d *Soto ibid.*

e *Th.* 22. *q.* 104. *ar.* 4. *ad* 2. *m.*

7 God cannot command a ſin, yet he can command murder.

f *Aug. cont. fauſt. l.* 26. *ca.* 3.

g *Th.* 1. *q.* 105. *ar.* 6. *ad.* 1.

h *De li. Arb. l.* 13. *ca.* 13.

8 Originall ſin is from nature.

the parent of all sinne, which is hereditary originall sin, which (i) *Aquinas* calls, [a languor and faintnesse in our nature, and an indisposition, proceeding from the dissolution of the harmony of originall Justice] is by him said to be in us, [(k) *quasi naturale*] And is, as he saith in another place, so (l) naturall, [that though it is propagated with our nature, in generation, though it be not caused by the principles of nature.] So (m) as if God would now miraculously frame a man, as he did the first woman, of another's flesh and bone, and not by way of generation, into that creature, all infirmities of our flesh would be derived but not originall Sin. So that originall sinne is traduced by nature onely, and all actuall sinne issuing from thence, all sinne is naturall.

i 12. q. 81. ar. 4.

k 3. q. 8. ar. 5. ad 7.

l 1. q. 100. ar. 1. ad 3.

m 12. q. 81. ar. 4.

SECT. VIII.

But to make our approaches neerer. Let us leave the consideration of the Law of nature, as it is Providence, and Gods decree for his government of the great world; and contract it only to the law of nature in the lesse world, our selves. There is then in us a (a) double law of nature, Sensitive and Rationall; and (b) the first doth naturally lead and conduce to the other. But because by the languor and faintnesse of our nature, we lazily rest there, and for the most part goe no further in our journeys therfore out of this ordinary

1 That if our adversaries by law of Nature meane onely Sensitive Nature, they say nothing, for so most vertuous actions are against Nature.

a *Tho.* 12. q. 71. ar. 2. *Con.*

b *Carbo Cas. Cons. To.* 2. *pa.* 1. *c.* 5.

nary indiſpoſition, *Aquinas* pronounceth, that the inclination of our ſenſitive nature is againſt the law of reaſon. And this is that which the Apoſtle calls the law of the fleſh, and oppoſeth againſt the law of the ſpirit. Rom. 7. 23.

Now although it be poſſible to ſinne and tranſgreſſe againſt this ſenſitive nature, which naturally and lawfully (c) is inclined upon *bonum delectabile*, by denying to it lawfull refreſhings, and fomentations; yet I think this is not that law of nature which theſe abhorrers of SELF-HOMICIDE complaine to bee violated by that Act. For ſo they might aſwell accuſe all diſcipline and auſteritie, and affectation of Martyrdome, which are as contrarie to the Law of ſenſitive Nature. c Tho. *ibid.*

SECT. IX.

And therefore, by law of nature, if they will meane any thing, and ſpeak to be underſtood, they muſt entend the law of rationall nature: which is that light which God hath afforded us of his eternall law; and which is uſually call'd *recta ratio*. Now this law of nature as it is onely in man and in him directed upon Piety, Religion, Sociableneſſe; and ſuch (for as it reacheth to the preſervation both of Species and individualls, there are lively prints of it in beaſts) is with moſt authors confounded and made the ſame with *jus gentium*. So (a) *Azorius*, and ſo (b) *Syl-*

1 As the law of Nature is *Recta Ratio*, it is *jus gentium*. So Immolation of men and Idolatry, are not againſt Nature.

a *Mor. Inſt.* l. 1. c. 5. q. 1.

(b) *Sylvius* delivers [That the law of nature, as it concerns only reason is *jus gentium*;] and therefore whatever is *jus gentium* that is, practised (and accepted in most, especially civil'st nations) is also law of nature, which (c) *Artemidorus* exemplifies, in these two, *Deum colere*, *mulieribus vinci*.

How then shall we accuse Idolatry, or immolation of men to be sinnes against nature? For (not to speak of the first, which like a deluge overflowed the whole world, and only *Canaan*, was a little Ark swimming upon it, delivered from utter drowning, but yet not from stormes and and leakes, and dangerous weather-beatings,) immolation of men was so ordinary, that (d) [almost every nation, though not barbarous, had received it.] the (e) *Druids* of *France* made their divinations from sacrifices of men. (f) And in their wars they presaged also after the same fashion. And for our times it appeares, by the Spanish relations, (g) that in only *Hispaniola* they sacrific'd yearly 20000 children.

b *Com. ad leg. Reg. præ.*

c *De Som. sign.*

d *Pol. Virg. de Invent. rer. l. 5. cap. 8.*
e *Middendorp. de Acad. l. 6. ex Io. Bermo.*
f *Cæsar. Bell. Gall. l. 6.*
g *Mat. Met. præf. ad Oser. Hist.*

SECT. X.

However since this is receiv'd [(a) that the nature of every thing is the forme by which it is constituted, and that to doe against it, is to doe against nature] since also this forme in man is reason and so to commit against reason is to sin against nature; what sin can be exempt from that charge, that it is a sin against nature, since every sin is

1 A reason is the forme, and so the Nature of man, every sin is against Nature, yea, whatsoever agrees not exactly with Christian Religion.
a 12. q. 71. ar. 2. Con.

is againſt reaſon. And in this acceptation (b) *Lucidus* takes the law of nature, when he ſayes [God hath written in our hearts ſuch a law of nature, as by that, we are ſaved in the coming of Chriſt.] And ſo every act which concurres not exactly with our religion ſhall bee ſinne againſt nature. Which will appeare evidently out of (c *Jeremies* words, where God promiſeth as a future bleſſing, that he will write his lawes in their hearts, which is the Chriſtian law. So that the Chriſtian law, and the law of nature, (for that is the law written in hearts) muſt be all one. Sinne therefore againſt nature is not ſo enormous, but that that may ſtand true, which *Navar* ſaith (d [that many lawes both naturall and divine doe bind onely *ad veniale.*] And ſo (not diſputing at this time, whither it be againſt reaſon alwaies or no,) (for reaſon and vertue differ no otherwiſe than a cloſe box of druggs, and an emplaiſter or medicine made from thence and applyed to a particular uſe and neceſſitie; and in the box are not onely aromatike ſimples, but many poyſons, which the nature of the diſeaſe, and the art of the Adminiſtrer make wholſome,) This SELF-HOMICIDE is no more againſt the law of nature, then any other ſinne, nor in any of the acceptations which we touch'd before. And this is as much as I determined for this firſt Diſtinction.

b *Epiſtola multis epiſt.*

c 31. 33.

d *Manual. ca.* 23. *nu.* 5.

2. Vertue produced to act, differs ſo from reaſon, as a medicine made and applyed, from a box of druggs.

Distinction II.

SECT. I.

1. Sinnes againſt nature in a particular ſenſe, are by Schoolmen ſaid to be unnaturall luſts; and this. But in Scriptures onely the firſt is ſo called.

THere is a lower and narrower acceptation of this law of nature (which could not well be diſcerned but by this light, and fore-diſcourſing) againſt which law, this ſinne, and a very few more, ſeeme to be directly bent, and oppoſed. For (a) *Azorius* ſayes, [That there are ſinnes peculiarly againſt nature, which are *contra naturalem uſum hominis*] which he exemplifies in unnaturall luſts, and in this. And of the former example (b) *Aquinas* ſayes, [That there are ſome kinds of luſts which are ſinnes againſt nature, both as they are generally vices, and as they are againſt the naturall order of the act of generation.] In the Scriptures alſo this ſinne of miſ-uſing the Sexe, is called againſt nature, by (c) S. *Paul*. And once (in the vulgar edition) in the (d) old Teſtament. But (as I intimated once before) this ſinne againſt nature is ſo much abhor'd, not becauſe the being againſt nature makes it ſo abominable, but becauſe the knowledge therof is ſo domeſtique, ſo neare, ſo inward to us, that our conſcience cannot ſlumber in it, nor diſſemble it, as in moſt other ſinnes it doth. For, in that example of the *Levite* in the booke of *Judges*, (if thoſe wicked men did ſeeke him for that abominable uſe, which (e) *Ioſephus* ſayes,

a *Mor. Inſtit. p.* 1. *l.* 4. *cap.* 1.
b 22. *q.* 154. *ar.* 11. *Con.*

c *Rom.* 1. 20.
d *Judg.* 19. 24

2. Of the example of the *Levite* in the *Judges*.
e *Antiq. l.* 5. *c.* 2.

sayes, was onely for his wife; And when himself relates to the people the history of his injury in the next chapter, he complains that they went about to kill him to enjoy his wife, and of no other kind of injury;) though the Host which had harbor'd him disswade the men thus, [*solum non operemini hoc contra naturam*] will any man say, that the offer which he made them to extinguish their furious lust, to expose to them his owne daughter, a virgine, and the wife of his guest, (which *Iosephus* encreases by calling her a *Levite* and his kinswoman,) was a lesse sinne, then to have given way to their violence, or lesse against nature, because that which they sought was *contra naturalem usum.* Is not every voluntary pollution, *in genere peccati,* as much against the law of nature, as this was, since it strayes and departs from the way, and defeats the end of that facultie in us, which is generation? The violating therefore of the law of nature, doth in no acceptation aggravate the sinne. Neither doth the Scripture call any other sinne, then disorderly lust by that name; S. *Paul* once appeals to the law of nature, when arguing about the covering of heads, of men or women at publique prayer, hee sayes, [*Judge in your selves;*] And [*Doth not nature teach you, that if a man have long haire, it is a shame.*] Not that this was against that law of nature to which all men were bound, for it was not alwayes so. For, in most places, shavings and cuttings, and pullings, are by the *Satyriques* and *Epigrammatists*

1 *Cor.* 11. 14. 3. S. *Pauls* use of the phrase *Law of nature* in long haire.

of thoſe times, reprehended for delicacy and effeminateneſſe. And the *Romans* till forrain corruption had envenom'd them, were ever call'd gloriouſly *Intonſi*; but becauſe (ſayes *Calvine*) [it was at that time received as a cuſtome throughout all *Greece*, to weare ſhort haire, S. *Paul* calls it naturall.]

So *Vegetius* ſayes [That from (f) *November* to *March* the Seas are ſhut up, and intractable *lege naturæ*,] which now are tame and tractable enough, and this alſo *lege naturæ*. And that cuſtome which S. *Paul* call'd naturall in *Greece*, was not long naturall there. For the Biſhops of *Rome*, when they made their Canons for Prieſts ſhavings, (g) did it becauſe they would have their Prieſts differ from the Prieſts of the *Greek* Church. So that S. *Paul* mentioning the law of nature, argues not from the weight and hainouſneſſe of the fault, as our adverſaries uſe; but uſeth it as the neareſt and moſt familiar and eaſie way to lead them to a knowledge of decencie, and a departing from ſcandalous ſingularitie in thoſe publique meetings.

f *De re milit. l. 4. c. 39.* 4. *Vegetius* uſe of that phraſe.

g *Pierius de barbis Sacerdotum.*

1. Selfe-preſervation is not ſo of particular law of nature, but that beaſts naturally tranſgreſſe it, whom it binds more then us; and we, when the reaſon thereof ceaſes in us, may tranſgreſſe it, and ſometimes muſt.

SECT. II.

And though *Azorius* (as I ſaid) and many others, make this *Selfe-homicide* an example of ſin, againſt particular Law of Nature; yet it is onely upon this reaſon, that *ſelfe-preſervation* is of Naturall Law. But that Naturall Law is ſo generall, that

that it extends to beasts more then to us, because they cannot compare degrees of obligation and distinctions of duties and offices, as we can. For we know that (a)[some things are naturall to the *species*, and other things to the particular *person*] and that the latter may correct the first. And therefore when (b) *Cicero* consulted the oracle at *Delphos*, he had this answer, [*Follow your owne nature*.] And so certainly that place, (c) [*It is not good for the man to be alone*,] is meant there, because if he were alone, Gods purpose of multiplying mankinde had beene frustrate. Yet though this be ill for conservation of our *species* in generall, yet it may be very fit for some particular man, to abstaine from all such conversation of marriage or men, and retire to a sollitude. For some may need that counsell of (d) *Chrysostome*, [Depart from the high way, & transplant thy self in some inclosed ground: for it is hard for a tree which stands by the way side, to keep her fruit, till it be ripe.] Our safest assurance, that we be not misled with the ambiguity of the word *Naturall Law*, and the perplex'd variety thereof in Authors, will be this, That [all the precepts of Naturall Law, result in these, *Fly evill, seek good*;] That is, doe according to Reason.

For these, as they are indispensable by any authority, so they cannot be abolished nor obscur'd, but that our hearts shall ever not onely retaine, but acknowledge this Law. From these are deduced by consequence, other precepts

a *Tho.* 12. *q.* 51. *ar.* 7. *Con.*

2. Things naturall to the *species*, are not alwaies so to the *individuum*

b *Fabricius Hist. Cicero, Ann.* 30.

c *Gen.* 2. 18.

3 Therefore some may abandon the world.

d *Homil.* 36. *Oper. imperf. in Matth.*

e *Th.* 12. *q.* 94. *ar.* 4.

4 First principles in naturall Law are obligatory, but not deductions from thence, and the lower we descend, the weaker they are.

which are not necessary alwaies; as *Redde depositum*. For though this seeme to follow of the first, *Doe according to reason*, yet it is not alwaies just. And as *Aquinas* saies, The lower you goe towards particulars, the more you depart from the necessitie of being bound to it. So (f) *Acacius* illustrates it more clearely, [It is naturall, and bindes all alwaies, to know there is a God. From this is deduced by necessary consequence, that God (if he be) must be worshipped; and after this, by likely consequence, that he must be worshipped in this or this manner.] And so every Sect will a little corruptly and adulterately call their discipline *Naturall Law*, and enjoyn a necessary obedience to it. But (g) though our substance of nature, (which is best understood of the foundations and principles, and first grounds of Naturall Law,) may not be changed, yet *functio naturæ*, (which is the exercise and application therof,) and deduction from thence may, and must. The like danger is in deducing consequences from this naturall Law, of *Selfe-preservation*; which doth not so rigorously, and urgently, and illimitedly binde, but that by the Law of Nature it selfe, things may, yea must neglect themselves for others; of which the Pellican is an instance, or an embleme.

And (h) St. *Ambrose* Philosophying divinely in a contemplation of Bees, after he hath afforded them many other prayses, sayes [*That when they finde themselves guilty of having broken any of their Kings*

f *De privilegiis Furis. l. 1. c. 8.*

g *Sylvius Comment. ad leg. reg. præfat. c. 1.*

5 Pellicans, and Bees, by S. *Ambrose*, kill themselves.

h *Hexam. l. 5. cap. 1.*

Kings Lawes, *Panitenti condemnatione se multent, ut immoriantur aculei sui vulnere*] Which magnanimity and justice, he compares there with the Subjects of the Kings of *Persia*, who in like cases are their owne executioners. As this naturall instinct in beasts, so rectified reason belonging onely to us, instructs us often to preferre publique and necessary persons, by exposing our selves to unevitable destruction.

No law is so primary and simple, but it foreimagines a reason upon which it was founded: and scarce any reason is so constant, but that circumstances alter it. In which case a private man is Emperor of himselfe; for so (i) a devout man interprets those words, [*Faciamus hominem ad imaginem nostrum*, id est, *sui juris*.] And he whose conscience well tempred and dispassion'd, assures him that the reason of selfe-preservation ceases in him, may also presume that the law ceases too, and may doe that then which otherwise were against that law.

6 The reason of almost every Law is mutable.

i *B. Dorotheus Doctrinâ* 12.

And therefore if it be true that [*it* (k) *belongs to the Bishop of* Rome, *to declare, interpret, limit, distinguish the law of God*,] as their Doctors teach, which is, to declare when the reason of the Law ceases: it may be as true which this Author, and the (l) Canons affirme, that he may dispense with that Law: for hee doth no more, then any man might doe of himselfe, if he could judge as infallibly. Let it be true that no man may at any time doe any thing against the law of nature, yet, (m) [*As*

k *Windeck. Canonum & legum consens. & dissens. ca.* 12.

7 He that can declare when the reason ceases, may dispence with the Law.

l 25. *q.* 1. *sunt quidam.*

m *Tho.* 22. *q.* 88. *ar.* 10. 8. How dispensations worke.

(m) [*As a dispensation workes not thus, that I may by it disobey a law, but that that law becomes to me no law, in that case wher the reason ceases*;] So may any man be the Bishop & Magistrate to himselfe, and dispense with his conscience, where it can appeare that the reason which is the soule and forme of the law, is ceased. Because, (n) as in Oathes and Vowes, so in the Law, the necessitie of dispensations proceedes from this, that a thing which universally considered in it selfe is profitable and honest, by reason of some particular event, becomes either dishonest or hurtfull; neither of which, can fall within the reach, or under the Commandement of any law; and in these exempt and priviledged cases, (o) [the priviledge is not *contra jus universale*, but *contra universalitem juris*.] It doth onely succor a person, not wound, nor infirme a law. No more, then I take from the vertue of light, or dignitie of the Sunne, if to escape the scortching thereof, I allow my selfe the reliefe of a shadow.

n *Tho.* 22. *q.* 89. *ar.* 9.

o *Acacius de privilegijs l.* 1. *ca.* 3.

And, as neither the watchfulnesse of Parliaments, nor the descents and indulgences of Princes, which have consented to lawes derogatory to themselves, have beene able to prejudice the Princes *non obstantes*, because prerogative is incomprehensible, and over-flowes and transcends all law. And as those Canons which boldly (and as some School-men say) blasphemously say, *Non licebit Papæ*, diminish not his fulnesse of power, nor impeach his *motus propriores*, (as they call them)

9. As nothing can annull the prerogative of Princes or Popes, though their own act seeme to provide against it; so no law doth so destroy mans liberty, but that he returnes to it, when the reason of the law ceases.

them) nor his *non obstante jure divino*, b cause they are understood ever to whisper some just reservation, *sine justa causa*, or *rebus sic stantibus*, so, what law soever is cast upon the conscience or liberty of man, of which the reason is mutable, is naturally condition'd with this, that it binds so long as the reason lives.

Besides, *Selfe-preservation*, which wee confesse to be the foundation of generall naturall Law, is no other thing then a naturall affection and appetition of good, whether true or seeming. For certainly the desire of Martyrdome, though the body perish, is a *Selfe-preservation*, because thereby, out of our election our best part is advanc'd. For heaven which we gaine so, is certainly good; Life, but probably and possibly. For here it holds well which (p) *Athenagoras* sayes, [*Earthly things and Heavenly differ so, as Veri-simile, & Verum*;] And this is the best description of felicitie that I have found, That [(q) it is *reditus uniuscujusque rei ad suum principium.*] Now since this law of *Selfe-preservation* is accomplish'd in attaining that which conduces to our ends, and is good to us, (for (r) liberty, which is a faculty of doing that which I would, is as much of the law of nature as preservation is; yet if for reasons seeming good to me, (as to preserve my life when I am justly taken prisoner, I will become a slave; I may doe it without violating the law of nature.) If I propose to my selfe in this SELF-HOMICIDE a greater good, though I mistake it, I perceive not

10. Selfe-preservation being but an appetition of that which is good to us, is not violated by this act.

p *De resurrect.*

q *Heptapl. Io. Pici. l. 7. proem.*

r *Sylvius Com. al leg. reg. præfat. l. 1.*

11. Liberty, which is naturally to be preserved, may be departed with.

wherein I tranſgreſſe the generall law of nature, which is an affection of good, true, or ſeeming: and if that which I affect by death, bee truely a greater good, wherein is the other ſtricter law of nature, which is rectified reaſon, violated?

SECT. III.

1. That cannot be againſt Law of Nature, which men have ever affected; if it be alſo, (as this is) againſt ſenſitive Nature, and ſo want the allureméts of other ſins.

a *De Subtil. lib.* 5.

Another reaſon which prevailes much with me, and delivers it from being againſt the Law of nature, is this, that in all ages, in all places, upon all occaſions, men of all conditions, have affected it, and inclin'd to doe it. And as (a) *Cardan* ſayes it, [*Mettall is planta ſepulta, and that a Mole is Animal ſepultum.*] So man, as though he were *Angelus ſepultus*, labours to be diſcharged of his earthly Sepulchre, his body. And though this may be ſaid of all other ſinnes, that men are propenſe to them, and yet for all that frequency, they are againſt nature, that is rectifyed reaſon, yet if this ſinne were againſt particular Law of nature, (as they muſt hold, which aggravate it by that circumſtance,) and that ſo it wrought to the deſtruction of our ſpecies, any otherwiſe then intemperate luſt, or ſurfet, or incurring penall Lawes, and ſuch like doe, it could not be ſo generall; ſince being contrary to our ſenſitive nature, it hath not the advantage of pleaſure and delight, to allure us withall, which other ſinnes have.

And when I frame to my ſelfe a Martyrologe of

of all which have perished by their own meanes for Religion, Countrey, Fame, Love, Ease, Feare, Shame; I blush to see how naked of followers all vertues are in respect of this fortitude; and that all Histories afford not so many examples, either of cunning and subtile devises, or of forcible and violent actions for the safeguard of life, as for destroying.

2. There are not so many examples of all other vertues, as of this one degree of Fortitude.

Petronius Arbiter who served *Nero*, a man of pleasure, in the office of Master of his pleasures, upon the first frowne went home, and cut his Veines. So present and immediate a step was it to him, from full pleasure to such a death.

Petr. Arbiter.

How subtilly and curiously *Attilius Regulus* destroyed himselfe? Wo being of such integritie, that he would never have lyed to save his life, lyed to lose it; falsely pleading, that the *Carthaginians* had given him poyson, and that within few dayes he should dye, though he stayed at *Rome*.

Attil. Regulus.

Yet *Codrus* forcing of his death, exceeded this, because in that base disguise he was likely to perish without fame.

Codrus.

Herennius the *Sicilian*, could endure to beat out his own braines against a post; and as though he had owed thanks to that braine which had given him this devise of killing himselfe, would not leave beating, till he could see and salute it.

Herennius.

Comas who had been a Captaine of theeves, when he came to the torture of examination, scorning all forraigne and accessorie helps to dye,

Comas.

made his owne breath, the inſtrument of his death, by ſtopping and reccluding it.

Annibal. *Annibal*, becauſe if hee ſhould be overtaken with extreame neceſſitie, he would be beholden to none for life nor death, dyed with poyſon which he alwaies carryed in a ring.

Demoſthenes. As *Demoſthenes* did with poyſon carryed in a penne.

Ariſtarchus. *Ariſtarchus* when he ſaw that 72 yeares, nor the corrupt and malignant diſeaſe of being a ſevere Critique, could weare him out, ſterved himſelfe then.

Homer. *Homer* which had written a thouſand things, which no man elſe underſtood, is ſaid to have hanged himſelfe, becauſe he underſtood not the Fiſhermens riddle.

Othryades. *Othryades* who onely ſurvived of 300 Champions, appointed to end a quarrell between the *Lacedemonians* and *Athenians*, when now the lives of all the 300 were in him, as though it had been a new victory to kill them over again, kill'd himſelfe.

Democles. *Democles*, whom a *Greeke* Tyrant would have forced, to ſhow that he could ſuffer any other heat, ſcalded himſelfe to death.

Portia. Lucſatius. *Portia*, *Cato's* daughter, and *Catulus Luctatius* ſought new concluſions, and as *Quintilian* calls them, [*Nova Sacramenta pereundi*,] and dyed by ſwallowing burning coales.

Declam. 17.

Terence. Poore *Terence* becauſe he loſt his 108 tranſlated Comedies, drown'd himſelfe.

And

And the Poet *Labienus*, becauſe his Satyricall Bookes were burned by Edict, burnt himſelfe too. *Labienus.*

And *Zeno*, before whom ſcarce any is preferr'd, becauſe he ſtumbled, and hurt his finger againſt the ground, interpreted that as a Summons from the earth, and hang'd himſelfe, being then almoſt .oo yeares old. For which act, *Diogenes Laertius* proclaimes him to have been [*Mira felicitate vir, qui incolumis, integer, ſine Morbo exceſsit.*] *Zeno.*

To cure himſelfe of a quartane, *Portius Latro* killed himſelfe. *Por. Latro.*

And *Feſtus*, *Domicians* Minion, onely to hide the deformity of a Ringworme in his face. *Feſtus.*

Hippionas the Poet rimed *Bubalus* the Painter to death with his Iambiques. *Hippionas.*

Macer bore well enough his being called into queſtion for great faults, but hanged himſelfe when hee heard that *Cicero* would plead againſt him, though the *Roman* condemnations at that time inflicted not ſo deep puniſhments. *Macer.*

And ſo *Caſsius Licinius* to eſcape *Cicero's* judgement, by choaking himſelfe with a napkin, had (as *Tacitus* calls it) *precium feſtinandi*. You can ſcarce immagine any perſon ſo happy, or miſerable, ſo repos'd or ſo vaine, or any occaſion either of true loſſe, or of ſhamefaſtneſſe, or frowardneſſe, but that there is ſome example of it. *Licinius.* *Annal. lib.* 5.

Yet no man, to me ſeemes to have made harder ſhift to dy, then *Charondas*, who firſt having *Charondas.*

made a new law, that it ſhould be death to enter the Counſell Chamber armed, not onely offended that Law, but puniſhed it preſently by falling upon his ſword.

But the generall houre of ſuch death is abundantly expreſſed, in thoſe ſwarmes of the *Roman* Gladiatory Champions, which, as (b) *Lipſius* collects, in ſome one month coſt *Europe* 30000 men, and to which exerciſe and profuſion of life, till expreſſe Lawes forbade it, (c) not onely men of great birth, and place in the State, but alſo women coveted to be admitted.

By *Eleazars* Oration recorded in (d) *Joſephus*, we may ſee how ſmall perſwaſions moved men to this. [*Hee onely told them, that the Philoſophers among the Indians did ſo. And that we and our children were borne to dy, but neither borne to ſerve.*]

And we may well collect, that in *Cæſars* time, in *France*, for one who dyed naturally, there dyed many by this devout violence. For (e) hee ſayes there were ſome, whom he calls *Devotos*, and *Clientes*, ((f) the latter Lawes call them *Soldurios*) which enjoying many benefits, and commodities, from men of higher ranke, alwaies when the Lord dyed, celebrated his Funerall with their owne. And *Cæſar* adds, that in the memorie of man, no one was fouud that ever refuſed it.

Which devotion I have read ſome where continues

3. Of the *Romane* Gladiators in great perſons, and great numbers

b *L.* 1. *cap.* 12. *de Gladiator.*

c *Idem. l.* 2. *cap.* 3.

d *De bell. Judai. l.* 7. *c.* 28.

4 Small perſwaſions drew men to it.

5 By the Soldurii in *France* it may be gathered, that more dyed ſo, then naturally.

e *Lib.* 3. *com. Bell. Gall.*

f *Tholoſa. Synt. lib.* 14. *cap.* 10. *N.* 14.

tinues yet in all the wives in the Kingdome of *Bengala* in the *Indies*.

And there not onely ſuch perſons, as doe it in teſtimony of an entire dependency, and of a gratitude, but the (g) *Samanai*, (which did not inherite Religion, and Prieſthood, and wiſedome, as *Levites* did amongſt the *Jewes*, and the *Gymnoſophiſts* amongſt them, but were admitted by election, upon notice taken of their ſanctity) are ſayd to have ſtudied wayes how to dye, and eſpecially then when they were in beſt ſtate of health. And yet (h) theſe Prieſts whoſe care was to dye thus, did ever ſumme up, and abridge all their precepts into this one, *Let a pious death determine a good life.* Such an eſtimation had they of this manner of dying. (i) How pathetically *Latinus Pacatus* expreſſes the ſweetneſſe of dying when we will; [*Others*, ſayth he, *after the conqueſt, making a braver bargaine with Deſtiny, prevented uncertaine death by certaine; and the ſlaves ſcaped whipping by ſtrangling. For who ever fear'd, after there was no hope? Or who would therefore forbeare to kill himſelfe, that another might? Is anothers hand eaſier then thine own? Or a private death fouler then a publique? Or is it more paine to fall upon thy ſword, and to oppreſſe the wound with thy body, and ſo receive death at once, then to divide the torment, bend the knee, ſtretch out the necke, perchance to more then one blow?*] And then wondring why *Maximus*, who had before murdered *Gratian*, and was now ſuppreſſed by *Theodoſius*, had not enjoyed the common benefit of killing himſelfe,

6. Wives in *Bengala* doe ſo yet.

7. The *Samanæi* which were Prieſts in the *Indies* uſed to doe it.

g *Porphyr. de Abſtin. antiq.*

h *Heurnius de philoſoph. Barbar. l. 2. ca. 2.*

i *Panegyr. Theodoſio.*

8. *Lat. Pacat.* expreſſeth this death pathetically.

himselfe, he turnes upon *Gratian*, and sayes, [*Thou* Reverend Gratian, *hast chased thine Executioner, and would'st not allow him leasure for so honest a death, least he should staine the sacred* Imperiall *robe with so impious blond, or that a* Tyrants *hand should performe thy revenge, or thou bee beholden to him for his owne death.*] And with like passion speakes another *Panegyrique* to *Constantine*, who after a victorie, tooke their swords from the conquered, *Ne quis incumberet dolori.* By which language one may see, how naturall it was to those times, to affect such dispatch.

k *Matal. Metel. præfat. in hist. Osorij.*

9. How the *Spaniards* corrected this naturall desire in the *Indians*.

And in our age, (k) when the *Spaniards* extended that Law, which was made onely against the *Canibals*, that they who would not accept Christian Religion, should incurre bondage; the *Indians* in infinite numbers escaped this by killing themselves; and never ceased, till the *Spaniards* by some counterfeitings made them thinke, that they also would kill themselves, and follow them with the same severity into the next life.

And thus much seeming to me sufficient, to defeate that argument which is drawen from *Selfe-preservation*, and to prove that it is not so of particular law of Nature, but that it is often transgressed naturally, wee will here end this second Distinction.

Distinct.

Distinction III.

SECT. I.

AFter this when men by civilitie and mutuall uſe one of another, became more thrifty of themſelves, and ſparing of thei lives, this ſolemnity of killing themſelves at funeralls wore out and vaniſh'd; yet leyſurely, and by unſenſible dimunitions. (a) [*For firſt in ſhew of it, the men wounded themſelves, and the women ſcratch'd and defaced their cheekes, and ſacrific'd ſo by that aſperſion of blood. After that, by their friends graves they made graves for themſelves, and entred into them alive, (as* Nunnes *doe when they renounce the world.) And after in ſhow of this ſhow, they onely tooke ſome of the earth, and wore it upon their heads: and ſo for the publique benefit were content to forfeit their cuſtome of dying*]

And after Chriſtianitie, which beſides the many advantages above all other Phyloſophies, that it hath made us clearely to underſtand the ſtate of the next life: which *Moſes* and his followers (though they underſtood it) diſguiſ'd ever under earthly rewards, and puniſhments: either becauſe humane nature after the firſt fall, till the reſtitution and dignification thereof by Chriſt, was generally incapable of ſuch myſteries, or, becauſe it was reſerved to our bleſſed Saviour to interpret and comment upon his owne Law, and that

a *Sylvius Com. ad leg. reg. c.* 24.

1 After civility and chriſtianity quenched this naturall deſire, in the place thereof, there ſucceeded a thirſt of Martyrdome.

2 How leiſurely the cuſtome of killing at funerals wore out.

3 *Moſes* delivered, and the philoſophers ſaw the ſtate of the next life, but unperfectly.

great ſucceſſive Trinity of humane wiſedome, *Socrates*, *Plato*, and *Ariſtotle*, ſaw but glimmeringly and variouſly; as alſo for matters of this life, the moſt Stoick and ſevere Sect that ever caſt bridle upon mankind, I ſay, after Chriſtianity had quench'd thoſe reſpects of fame, eaſe, ſhame, and ſuch, how quickly naturally man ſnatch'd and embraced a new way of profuſing his life by Martyrdome?

SECT. II.

1 That this was for the moſt part inſinuated into men by Naturall reaſons, and much upon humane reſpects.

For whil'ſt the famous acts, or famous ſuffrings of the *Jewes*, for defence even of Ceremonies, (many thouſands of them being ſlaine, onely becauſe they would not defend themſelves upon the Saboth;) And whil'ſt the cuſtome of that Nation ever embrued in ſacrifices of blood, and all, moſt of all other Nations devout and earneſt even in the immolation of men. And whil'ſt the example of our bleſſed Saviour, who choſe that way for our Redemption to ſacrifice his life, and profuſe his blood, was now freſh in them, and govern'd all their affections, it was not hard for their Doctors even by naturall reaſons, and by examples to invite, or to cheriſh their propenſneſſe to Martyrdome.

Stromat. l. 4.

2 So proceeded *Clement.*

Clement therefore when he handles this point, ſcarce preſents to them any other argument then naturall men were capable of, and ſuch food, and ſuch fuell, as would ſerve the taſt and fervour

vour of ſuch an one as were not curious above Nature. As, that Death was not naturally evill: That Martyrdome was the beginning of another life. That the Heathen endured greater paines for leſſe reward. That a Barbarous people immolated every yeare a principall Philoſoper to *Xamolxis* an Idol; and they upon whom the lot fell not, mourn'd for that. And with moſt earneſtneſſe that Martyrdome is in our owne power: which be arguments better proportioned to Nature, then to Divinity; and therefore *Clement* preſumed them men inclined, or inclinable by nature to this affection.

Tertullians Reaſons are ſomewhat more ſublime; yet rather fine, and delightfull, then ſollid and weighty; As, That God knowing man would ſin after Baptiſme, provided him, *Secunda ſolatia, lavacrum Sanguinis*: That the death of Saints, which is ſaid to be precious in Gods ſight, cannot bee underſtood of the naturall death common to all: And that from the beginning in *Abel* righteouſneſſe was afflicted. And theſe reaſons were not ſuch as would have entred any, in whom a naturall inclination had not ſet open the gates before.

L. cont. Gnoſtic. 3. So did *Tertullian.*

Cyprian alſo takes the ſame way; and inſiſts upon application of Prophecies of theſe two ſorts; That they ſhould bee deſpiſed in this world, and that they ſhould be rewarded in the next.

Lib. de exhort. Martyrii ad fortunatum. So did *Cyprian.*

To theſe were added externall Honours,

(a) Annuall celebrating their Memories, and entitling their deaths, *Natalitia*; And (b) that early instituting of the office of Notaries to regulate their passions, even in *Clemens* time; And (c) the proposing their *Salita capita* to bee worshipped; which word (though *Eunapius* speake it prophanely) was not undeserved by the generall misuse of such devotion.

And (d) after the Monopoly of appropriating Martyrdome, and establishing the benefit thereof upon them onely which held the integritie of faith, and were in the unity of the Church; of which perswasion *Augustine*, and *Hierom*, and most of the Ancients are cited to be; and then by continuall increasing the dignity and merit of it, as that (e) *ex opere operato*, it purged actuall sinne, as Baptisme did originall; And (f) that without Charitie, and in Schisme, though it merited not salvation, yet it diminished the intensnesse of Damnation.

And by these they incited mans nature to it, which also might be a little corruptly warmed towards it, by seeing them ever punisht who afflicted them, for so (g) *Tertullian* saies, that [*no City escaped punishment, which had shed Christian bloud.*]

After this, they descended to admit more into their fellowship, and communicate and extend these priviledges: for by such indulgence are (h) *Herods* Infants Martyrs: So is *John Baptist*, though he dyed not for a matter of Christian

a *Tertul. de Corona Milit.*
4 Externall Honours to Martyrs.
b *Damasc. & Platin.*
c *Hadr. Junius in Eunapii vita*
5 Monopolie of Martyrdom
d *Fevardentius l. 8. c. 13. Baron. Martyr. cap. 10.*
e *Carbo. Cas. Cons. To. 2. pa. 2. c. 6.*
f *De pœniten. Dist. 1. Si qui autẽ. Ex Aug. de pœnitent.*
6 Gods punishments upon their persecutors, encouraged men to Martyrdome.
g *Ad Scapulam.*
7. Extending priviledges of Martyrs to many.
h *Aug. Epist. ad Hieron. 28. De Nat. & Orig. Anim.*

ſtian faith: So (i) is he which ſuffers for any vertue, and he which dyes in his mothers womb, if ſhe be a Martyr. (k) And ſo is he which being for Chriſtian profeſſion wounded deadly, recovers: and hee which being not deadly wounded, dyes after of ſickneſſe contracted by his owne negligence, if that negligence amounted not to mortall ſinne.

i *Aſſoris: Eman. Sa. verbo Martyr.*
k *Tho. 22 q. 124. ar. 4. ad quart.*

So not onely the ſickly and infirme ſucceeding Ages, but even the pureſt times did cherriſh in men this deſire of death, even by contrary reaſons; both which notwithſtanding by change of circumſtances, had apparance of good. For as fire is made more intenſe, ſometimes by ſprinkling water, ſometimes by adding fuell. So when their teachers found any cooleneſſe or remiſſeneſſe in them, and an inclination to flight, or compoſition with the State, then (l) *Cyprian* noted ſuch with the ignominy of *Libellatici*, becauſe they had taken an acquittance of the State, and ſayes of them [*Culpa minor ſacrificatorum, ſed non innocens conſcientia.*]

8. Contrary reaſons cheriſhed this deſire in them.

9 *Cyprian Libellatici.* Compounders with the State.

l *Sermo de Laſſis.*

And then (m) *Tertullian* equally infames flying away, and ſuch marchandizing, when hee ſayes, [*Perſecution muſt not be redeemed; for running away is a buying of your peace for nothing, and a buying of your peace for money is a running away.*]

m *De fuga. præſcriptio. 2.*
10 *Tertullian* condemnes flying in perſecution.

And then we ſhall finde that even againſt the nature of the word Martyre, it became the common opinion, that death was requiſite and neceſſarie to make one a Martyr.

11 Death became to bee held neceſſary to make one a Martyr.

So in (n) *Euſebius*, the Chriſtians though afflicted, modeſtly refuſe the name of Martyrs, and profeſſe that they have not deſerved it, except they may be kill'd.

12. In times when they exceeded in diſcreet expoſing themſelves, they taught that Martyres might be without dying.

Contrarywiſe in other times when the diſeaſe of head-long dying at once, ſeemed both to weare out their numbers, and to lay ſome ſcandall upon the cauſe, which wrought ſuch a deſire in men, which underſtood not why they did it, but uninſtructed, uncatechized, yea unbaptized, (but that the charity of the Supervivers imputed to them *Baptiſma fluminis*, as they hope, or at leaſt, *Sanguinis*, for that they ſaw) did onely, as they ſaw others doe; Then I ſay (as (o) a Learned Writer of our time ſayes, [*That the Church abſtaines from eaſie Canonizing, Ne vileſceret Sanctitas*] (which is not here Holineſſe, but Sainctſhip) leaſt the dignity of Martyrdome ſhould be aviled by ſuch promiſcuous admittance to it, they were often contented to allow them the comfort of Martydome without dying; which was but a returning to the naturall ſenſe of the word.

So *Ignatius* ſtiles himſelfe in his Epiſtles, Martyr. Yea more then the reſt he brought down the value thereof, and the deare purchaſe, for he ſayes (p [*That as he which honors a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, ſhall have a Prophets reward; So hee ſhall have a Martyrs reward which honors* [*vinctum Chriſti.*] And ſo our moſt bleſſed Saviour, proceeding in his mercifull purpoſe of encreaſing his King-

n *Hiſt. l. 5. c. 2.*

o *Azor. Mor. Inſt. p. 2. l. 5. cap. 7.*

Ad Polycarp.

p *Ad Smirnen.*

Kingdome upon earth, yet permitting the Heathen Princes to continue theirs as yet, the Christian Religion was dilated and oppreſſed; and the profeſſors thereof, ſo dejected and worne with confiſcations and impriſonments, thought that as in the (q) *Paſſeover* from *Egypt* every doore was ſprinkled with blood; So Heaven had no doore from this world but by fires, croſſes, and bloody perſecutions: and preſuming Heaven to be at the next ſtep, they would often ſtubbornly or ſtupidly winke, and ſo make that one ſtep.

q *Exod.* 12. 7.

God forbid any ſhould be ſo malignant, ſo to miſ-interpret mee, as though I thought not *the blood of Martyrs to be the ſeed of the Church*, or diminiſhed the dignity thereof; yet it becomes any ingenuity to confeſſe, that thoſe times were affected with a diſeaſe of this naturall deſire of ſuch a death; and that to ſuch may fruitfully be applyed thoſe words of the good B: *Paulinus*, (r) [*Athleta non vincit ſtatim, quia eruitur: nec ideo tranſnatant, quia ſe ſpoliant.*] Alas! we may fall & drown at the laſt ſtroke; for, to ſayle to heaven it is not enough to caſt away the burdenous ſuperfluities which we have long carried about us, but we muſt alſo take in a good frayte. It is not lightneſſe, but an even-repoſed ſtedfaſtneſſe, which carries us thither.

r *Severo ep.* 2.

But (ſ) *Cyprian* was forced to finde out an anſwer to this lamentation, which he then found to be common to men on their death beds, [*Wee mourne becauſe with all our ſtrength we had vowed our ſelves*

ſ *De Contempt. mortis.* 13 *Cyprian. profeſ.* Men who offered their lives before they were called.

ſelves to Martyrdome, of which we are thus deprived, by being prevented by naturall death.] And (t) for them who before they were called upon, offered themſelves to Martyrdome, he is faine to provide the glorious and ſatisfactory name of Profeſſors.

t *Baroni. Mar. 2. Ian. H.*

14 Enforcers of their owne Martyrdome.

From ſuch an inordinate deſire, too obedient to nature, proceeded the fury of ſome Chriſtians (u) who when ſentence was pronounced againſt others, ſtanding by, cryed out, *Wee alſo are Chriſtians.*

u *Euſeb. Hiſt. l. 8. c. 9.*

15 Examples of inordinate affecting of Martyrdome. *Germanus.*

And that inexcuſable forwardneſſe of *Germanus*, (x) who drew the beaſt to him, and enforced it to teare his body; And why did he this? *Euſebius* delivers his reaſon; That he might bee the ſooner delivered out of this wicked and ſinfull life. Which (y) acts *Euſebius* glorifies with this prayſe, [That they did them *mente digna Philoſophis*] So that it ſeemes wiſeſt men provoked this by their examples; As (z) at the burning of the temple at Hieruſalem, *Meirus* and *Ioſephus*, though they had way to the Romans, caſt themſelves into the fire. How paſſionately (a) *Ignatius* ſolicites the Roman Chriſtians not to interrupt his death. [*I feare ſaith he, your charity will hurt me, and put me to beginne my courſe again, except you endeavour that it may be ſacrificed now. I profeſſe to all Churches*; quod voluntarius morior] *And after*, Blandiciis demulcete feras; *entice and corrupt the Beaſts to devoure me, and to be my ſepulchre*, fruar beſt is, *Let me enjoy thoſe beaſts, whom I wiſh much more cruell then they are; and if they*

x *Hiſt. l. 4. c. 14.*

y *Hiſt. l. 4. c. 10.*

Meir. & Ioſeph. z *Ioſeph. de bel. Iud. l. 7. c. 11.*

a *Ignati. epiſt. ad Roman.*

16 *Ignatius* ſolicitation for it.

they will not attempt me, I will provoke and draw them by force] And what was *Ignatius* reaſon for this, being a man neceſſary to thoſe Churches, and having allowable excuſes of avoiding it? [*quia mihi utile mori eſt.*] ſuch an intemperance urged the woman of *Ediſſa,* (b) when the Emperour *Valens* had forbidden the Chriſtians one temple, to which particular reaſons of devotion invited them, to enrage the Officers with this Contumely, when they asked her, why thus ſquallid, and headlong ſhe dregg'd her ſonne through the ſtreets; I do it leaſt when you have ſlaine all the other Chriſtians, I and my ſonne ſhould come to late to partake that benefit. And ſuch a diſorderly heate poſſeſſed that (c) old wretched man, which paſſing by after the execution of a whole legion of **6666**, by iterated decimation, under *Maximianus*, although he were anſwered that they dyed, not onely for reſiſting the Roman Religion, but the State, for all that, wiſh't that he might have the happines to be with them, and ſo extorted a Martyrdome. For that age was growne ſo hungry and ravenous of it, that many were baptized onely becauſe they would be burnt, and children taught to vexe and provoke Executioners, that they might be thrown into the fire.

Ediſſena.
b *Nicephor. l.* 11.c.21.

c *Speculum vinc. To.* 4.*l.* 11.c.40.

And this aſſuredneſſe that men in a full perſwaſion of doing well would naturally runne to this, made (d) the proconſul in *Africk* proclaime, Is there any more Chriſtians which deſire to dy,

d *Bod. Dæmon. l.*4.*c.*3. *ex Tertulli.*

17 Lawes forbidding more executions made to deſpite Chriſtians.

and when a whole multitude by generall voice discovered themselves, he bid them [*Goe hang and drown your selves and ease the Magistrate.*] And this naturall disposition, (e) afforded *Mahomet* an argument against the *Jews*, [*if your Religion be so good, why doe you not dy?*] for our primitive Church was so enamored of death, and so satisfied with it, that to vex and torture them more, (f) the Magistrate made lawes to take from them the comfort of dying, and encreased their persecution by ceasing it, for they gloried in their Numbers.

e *Alc. 72. Az.*

f *Ex Tertul. Bodin. supra*

18 Glory in the numbers of Martyrs.

And as in other warfares men muster and reckon how many they bring into the field, their confidence of victory was in the multitudes of them which were lost. So they admit into the Catalogue *Herods* Infants, and the 144000 Virgins. And (g) when 9000 Souldiers under *Adrian* by apparition of an Angel, are said to have embraced Christian Religion, and when the Emperour sent others to execute them, 1000 of those executioners joyn'd to them, and so the whole 10000 were crucified (h) And of an intire legion massacred at once we spoke but now. And *Baronius* (i) speakes of 10000 crucified in *Armenia*, celebrate upon the 22th. of *June*: whether divers from the 10000 under *Adrian* or no, I have not examined. (k) Saint *Gregory* says, [*Let God number our Martyrs, for to us they are more in number then then the sands.*] And (l) *Baronius* saies, That excepting the first of *January*, (which yet in the Roman Mar-

g *Specul. Vin. To. 4. l. 10 c. 88.*

h *Supra fo. 66.*

i *Baron. Mart. 22. Iune.*

k *Homil. 27. in Evangel.*

l *Martyrolog. cap. 8.*

Martyrologe records as many, as moſt other daies) there is no day which hath not 500 Martyres; almoſt every one hath 900, or 800.

SECT. III.

And when the *Church* encreaſed abundantly under all theſe preſſures, (for, As in profane and ſecular wars, the greater the Triumphs of a Conquerour are, the greater alſo are his Armies, becauſe then more and more concur to his ſplendor, and to praticipate his fortunes; So in this ſpirituall warfare, the greater the triumphant Church was, the greater grew the Militant, aſſiſted both with the Example & Prayers of the other.) And when all theſe treadings downe did but harrow our Saviours field, and prepare and better it for his Harveſt, The bloud of the Martyrs (for though, as I ſay ſtill, very many dyed out of a naturall infirmitie of deſpiſing this life, a great number had their direct marke upon the glory of God, and went to it awake) having, as a (a) *Nicephorus* ſayes, almoſt ſtrangled the Devill, hee tryed by his two greateſt Inſtruments, (when they are his) the Magiſtrate, and the Learned, to avert them from this inclination.

1. That Heretiques ſeeing the dignity gained by Martyrdome, laboured to avert them from it, but could not correct this naturall inclination.

a *Lib. 4. cap. 2.*

For, ſuggeſting to the Magiſtrate that their forwardneſſe to dye, grew onely from their faith in the Reſurrection, he (b) procur'd there bo dyes to be burnt, and their aſhes ſcattered into

2. The Devill labours the Magiſtrates to quench their deſire of dying

b *Specul. Vitæ To. 4. cap. 102. lib. 10.*

Rivers, to frustrate and defeat that expectation; And he raised up subtile Heretiques, to infirme and darken the vertue and majestie of Martyrdome.

Basilides heref. *Anno* 134. 3. *Basilides* denyed Christ to have been crucifyed, & that therefore they dyed madly.

Of which the most pestilently cunning *Basilides*, fore-suspecting that hee should not easily remove that desire of dying, which Nature had bred, and Custome confirmed in them, tryed to remove that which had root onely in their Religion, as being yet of tenderer growth, and more removable then naturall impressions. Therfore he offered not to impugne their exposing themselves to death in all cases, but onely said, (c) that it was madnesse to dye for Christ, since he, by whose example they did it, was not crucified, but *Symon* who bore the Crosse.

c *Alfon. Castr. verb. Martyr. ex Philast.*

Another (d) Heretique, called *Helcheſar*, perceiving that it was too hasty to condemne the act of Martyrdome even for Christ, thought onely to slacken their desire to it, by teaching, that in time of Persecution, so wee kept our heart at Anchor safe, we were not bound to testifie our Religion by any outward act, much lesse by dying.

d *Prateolus l. 5. ex Niceph. 4. Helcheſar* that outward profession of Religion was not needfull.

5. That also the *Gnostici* taught, and why they prevailed not.

Which Doctrine the *Gnostici* also taught, but prevailed little, both because the contrary was rooted in Nature, and because they accompanied this doctrine, with many others, foule and odious even to sense; and because they were resisted by *Tertullian*, a man mighty, both in his generall abilities, and in his particular and profes-

sed

ſed earneſtneſſe to magnifie Martyrdome: And againſt theſe he writ his *Scorpiacum*.

SECT. IIII.

This way giving no advantage to Hereticks, they let looſe the bridle of their owne nature too, and apprehended any occaſion of dying as forwardly as the Orthodoxall Chriſtians. And becauſe the other preſcrib'd againſt them, and were before hand with them in number, to redeeme time and overtake them, they conſtituted new occaſions of Martyrdome.

1. That Hetiques failing herein, tooke naturall ways, of overtaking the Orthodox in Numbers of Martyrs.

(a) *Petilian* againſt whom St. *Aug:* writ, taught, that whoſoever kill'd himſelf as a Magiſtrate, to puniſh a ſinne committed before, was a Martyr.

2. *Petilian* new way of Martyrdom.

a *Alf. Caſtr. ver. Martyrium*

And they who are by Saint *Auguſtine*, and others, called *Circumcelliones*, and *Circuitores*, (becauſe (I thinke) as their Maſter, they went about to devoure) would entreate, perſwade, enforce others to kill them, and fruſtrated after all thoſe provocations, would doe it themſelves, and by their ſurvivors bee celebrated for Martyrs. Theſe were of the (b) *Donatiſts*, of whom Saint *Auguſtine* ſayes, To kill themſelves out of reſpect of Martyrdome, was *Ludus Quotidianus*

3. Another new way of the *Circumcelliones* & *Circuitores*.

b *To. 2. Ep. 50.*

Other Hereticks alſo, whoſe errors were not about Martyrdome, haſtened to it. So the (c) *Cataphrygæ* who erroniouſly baptizing the dead, Ordaining Women, Annulling ſecond Marriges, and erring in ſuch points, (d) could ſoone boaſt of their number of Martyrs; perchance

4. The *Cataphrygæ* exceed in Number.

c *Prateolus.*

d *Baron. Martyr. C. 10.*

chance becauſe *Tertullian* being then on their part, they found him, as he was whereſoever he came, a hot encourager of men to Martyrdome. It is complain'd in (e) *Euſebius*, that Heretiques ſeeing their arguments confuted, fled now to their number of Martyrs, in which they pretended to exceed the others. And from their numbers of Martyres, (f) the *Euphemitæ* called themſelves *Martyrians*. And thereupon (g) *Baronius* ſaies, [*Amongſt the heathen, perchance you may heare, and there find one* Empedocles, *which will burne himſelf, but amongſt the Donatiſts, Hominum examina.*]

e *Hiſt. l. 5. c. 15*

f *Baron. Martyrol. ca. 10. Ex Epiph. Hær. 80*

g *Schultingius, To. 3. ca. 177.*

10. *Euphemitæ* therefore called *Martyrians*

SECT. V.

So that the authoritie gained by their forwardneſſe to equall the number of true Martyrs, was ſo great, and began ſo farre to perplex the world, that ſome Councels foreſeeing, that if both ſides did it equally, it would all be imputed to humane reſpects, began to take it into their care to provide againſt it. And thereupon (a) your Councell exhibites an expreſſe Canon, That no Chriſtian leaving true Martyrs, ſhould goe to falſe, *Quia alieni à Deo.* And (b) another corrects the other Hereſie of diminiſhing the reputation of Martyrs thus, *Martyrum dignitatem nemo profanus infamet.*

1. Hereupon Councels took it into their care to diſtinguiſh true Martyrs, from thoſe who dyed for naturall and humane reſpects.

a *Conc. Laodic. Can. 33.*

b *Conc. Carth. 1. C. 2.*

SECT.

SECT. VI.

Thus when the true Spirit of God drew many, the ſpirit of Contention many, and other naturall infirmities more, to expoſe themſelves eaſily to death, it may well be thought, that from thence the Authors of theſe later Ages, have ſomewhat remitted the intenſneſſe of Martyrdome, and mingled more allayes, or rather more metall, and not made it of ſo great value alone, as thoſe earneſt times did: for ſince (a) Saint *Thomas* ſaid, [*That though Martyrdome be a worke of greateſt perfection, yet it is not of it ſelfe, but as it is wrought by charity, and expreſſes that.*]

Vaſquez (b) reprehends *Cordobenſis* for ſaying that it is any worſhip of God: for [*it is not ſayes he, a Sacrifice nor worke of Religion, but of fortitude, which is but a morall vertue*] Therefore it is now (c) taught, [*that it is a mortall ſinne to provoke another to inflict Martyrdome.*] And (d) a Martyr, (though Martyrdome purge much) is bound to cleanſe himſelfe by every one of the Degrees of penance, for ſaith *Carbo*, [*it is not* Sacramentum, *but* opus privilegiatum.] So they ſeeme tender and loth by addition of religious incitements, to cheriſh or further that deſire of dying, to which by reaſon of our weakneſſe, and this worlds encumbrances, our nature is too propenſe and inclined.

Onely the *Ieſuits* boaſt of their hunting out of Mar-

1 Therefore later Authors do ſomewhat remit the Dignity of Martyrdome.

a 2. q. 124. ar. 3.

b *De Adoratione l.* 1. *N.* 42.

c *Navar. Man. c.* 11. *Nu.* 40.

d *Carbo. Caſ. Conſ. To.* 1. *c.* 6.

2 The *Ieſuits* ſtill profeſſe an enormous love to ſuch death.

Martyrdome in the new worlds, and of their rage till they finde it. (e) He which hath brought them all upon one Scene, ſaies that [Alfonſus Caſtro *at his execution in the* Molucca, *was ſo overjoyed that he forgot his modeſty* [Rapimus Martyrium, *ſayes he*, ſpontanea irruptione,] And [*one would think that it were a diſeaſe in us*] [*Which we doe, leaſt the reſt of our life ſhould be* Meritis ſterile, & gloria vacuum] [*we bargaine and contract with our profeſſion, upon that Condition, that we may* prodigere animas in hoſtili ferro;] [*And we poſſeſſe no more, then ſuch ſmall matters as onely ſerve to cut off our life.*] So that, if this deſire of dying be not agreeable to the nature of man, but againſt it, yet it ſeemes that it is not againſt the nature of a *Ieſuite*. And ſo we end this Diſtinction, which we purpoſed onely for the conſideration of this deſire of Martyrdome, which ſwallowed up all the other inducements, which, before Chriſtianity contracted them, tickled and inflamed mankinde.

e *Clarus Bonarſicus Amphitheat. Honor. l. 1. c. 4.*

Diſtinction IIII.

SECT. 1.

THere remaines onely for the fourth and laſt Diſtinction of this firſt part, our reaſon by which this SELF-HOMICIDE ſeemes to me to eſcape

1 Lawes and cuſtomes of well policed eſtates having admitted it, it is not likely to be againſt law of Nature.

eſcape the breach of any Law of Nature, which is, that both expreſſe literall Lawes, and mute Law, cuſtome, hath authorized it, not onely by ſuffering, and connivency, but by appointing it.

And it hath the countenance not onely of many flouriſhing and well policed ſtates, but alſo of Imaginary Common-wealths, which cunning Authors have Idæated, and in which ſuch enormous faults are not like to be admitted. Amongſt the *Athenians* condemned men were their own executioners by poyſon. And amongſt the *Romans* often by bloodlettings. And it is recorded of many places, that all the *Sexagenarii*, were by the lawes of wiſe States, precipitated frō a bridge. Of which, if (a) *Pierius* his conjecture be true, that this report was occaſioned by a cuſtome in *Rome*, by which men of that age were not admitted to ſurffage; And becauſe the way to the Senate was *per pontem*, they which for age were not permitted to come thither, were called *Depontani*, yet it is more certaine, that (b) amongſt the *Ceans* unprofitable old men poyſoned themſelves; which they did crown with garlands, as triumphers over humane miſery. And the (c) *Æthiopians* loved death ſo well, that their greateſt Malefactors being condemned to baniſhment, eſcaped it Ordinarily by killing themſelves. (d) The civill law, where it appoints no puniſhment to the delinquent in this caſe, neither in his eſtate nor memory, puniſhes

2 True and Idæated common-wealths have allowed it.

Athenians.

Romans.

Depontum.

a *Hierogliph. l.* 17.

Ceans.

b *Ælianus. l.* 3. *cap.* 26.

c *Diod. Sicul. l.* 2. *bib.* *Æthiopians.*

d *Dig. l.* 48. *tit.* 3. *leg. final.*

3 Civill law and all others, preſume it, in condemned men.

a keeper, if his priſoner kill himſelfe; out of a prejudice, that if meanes may be afforded them, they will all doe ſo.

And do not we ſee it to be the cuſtome of all Nations now, to manacle and diſarme condemned men, out of a ſore aſſurance that elſe they would eſcape death by death? (e) Sir *Thomas Moore* (a man of the moſt tender and delicate conſcience, that the world ſaw ſince Saint *Auguſtine*) not likely to write any thing in jeſt miſchieuouſly interpretable, ſayes, That in *Vtopia*, the Prieſts and Magiſtrates did uſe to exhort men afflicted with incurable diſeaſes, to kill themſelves, and that they were obeyed as the interpreters of Gods will; But that they who killed themſelves without giving an account of their reaſons to them, were caſt out unburied. And (f) *Plato* who is uſually cited againſt this opinion, diſputes in it, in no ſeverer faſhion, nor more peremptory then thus, [*What ſhall we ſay of him, which kills his neareſt and moſt deare friend? which deprives himſelfe of life, and of the purpoſe of deſtiny? And not urged by any Sentence, or Heavy Misfortune, nor extreame ſhame, but out of a cowardlineſſe, and weakneſſe of a fearfull minde, doth unjuſtly kill himſelfe? What Purgatory, and what burriall by law belongs to him, God himſelfe knowes. But let his friends inquire of the Interpreters of the law, and doe as they ſhall direct.*] You ſee nothing is delivered by him againſt it, but modeſtly, limitedly, and perplexedly.

c *Vtop. l. 2. c. de ſervis.*
4 In *Vtopia* authoriſed.

5 And by *Plato* in certaine caſes.
f *De leg. 9.*

And

And this is all which I will say of the first member of that definition of sinne which I undertooke, which is, transgressing of the Law of Nature. Wherein I make account that I have sufficiently delivered and rescued this *Selfe-homicide*, from any such violating of the Law, as may aggravate the fact, or make it hainous.

6 Conclusion of the first part.

Second Part.

Distinction I.

Of the Law of Reason.

SECT. I.

THat part of the Definition of sin, which wee received for the second place, is, That it be against the Law of Reason; where, if we should accept Reason for *Recta Ratio*, (especially primarily, and originally,) it would be the same as Law of Nature. Therefore I rather choose to admit such an acceptation thereof, as may bring most doubts into disputation, and so into clearenesse.

1. That the law of reason, is, conclusions drawne from primary reason by discourse.

Reaſon therefore in this place ſhall ſignifie concluſions drawne and deduced from the primary Reaſon, by our diſcourſe and ratiocination: And ſo ſinne againſt reaſon, is ſinne againſt ſuch arguments and concluſions as may by good conſequence be derived from primary and originall Reaſon, which is light of nature.

2. How much ſtrength Reaſons deduced have.

This primary reaſon therefore, againſt which none can plead lycenſe, law, cuſtome, or pardon, hath in us a ſoveraigne, and masculine force; and by it, through our Diſcourſe, which doth the motherly office of ſhaping them, and bringing them forth and up, it produces concluſions and reſolutions.

SECT. II.

1. Of this ſort of Reaſons, generall lawes have the greateſt authority.

And as in earthly Kingdoms, the Kings children, and theirs, and their race, as farre as we may reaſonably preſume any tincture of blood, have many priviledges and reſpects due to them, which yet were forfeited if there appeared any baſtardy or interruption of lawfull deſcent from that roote; And though theſe reſpects and obſequiouſneſſe, belong to them as they are propagated from that roote, and as ſome ſparks of that Soveraignty glimmer in them, yet their Servants and Officers take them where they finde them, and conſider them onely as Dukes, or Lords, and poſſeſſors of patrimoniall eſtates, but every mans heart and allegeance is directed and

and faſtned upon the Prince, and perchance a ſtep or two lower, with a preſent and immediate relation to the father, and what they have from him. So whē from thoſe true propoſitions, which are the eldeſt children and iſſue of our light of Nature, and of our diſcourſe, concluſions are produced, thoſe concluſions alſo have now the Nature of propoſitions and beget more; and to all theſe there belongs an aſſent and ſubmiſſion on our parts, if none by the way have beene corrupted and baſtarded by fallacy. And though (as in the other caſe) men of a weake diſpoſition, or lazey, or flattering, looke no farther into any of theſe propoſitions, then from whoſe mouth it proceeds, or what authority it hath now, not from whence it was produced, yet upon the heire apparent, which is, every neceſſary conſequence from naturall light, every mans reſolution is determin'd, and arreſted by it, and ſubmitted to it. And though humane lawes, by which Kingdomes are policed, be not ſo very neare to this Crown of certaine Truth, and firſt light, (for if they were neceſſary conſequences from that law of nature, they could not be contrary in divers places and times, as we ſee lawes to be) yet I doe juſtly eſteeme them neerer, and to have more of that bloud royall in them, then the reſolutions of particular men, or of Schooles.

Both becauſe it is of the eſſence of all humane law, that it agrees with nature, (I meane for the obligation *in interiori foro*, without which a law

2. For that is of there eſſence that they agree with law of Nature.

hath no more ſtrength, then an uſurper, whom they which obey, watch an opportunity to diſpoſſeſſe.)

3. And there is better teſtimony of their producing, then of private mens opinions

And becauſe Aſſemblies of Parliaments, and Councels, and Courts, are to be preſumed more diligent for the delivery and obſtetrication of thoſe children of naturall law, and better witneſſe that no falſe nor ſuppoſititious iſſue be admitted, then any one man can be. For (a) the law is therefore well call'd *Communis Reip. ſponſio*, becauſe that word ſignifies as well, that, to which they have all betroth'd themſelves, as, the ſecuritie and ſtipulation which the State gives for every mans direction and aſſurance in all his civill actions. Since therefore we have in the firſt part throughly examined, whether this *Selfe homicide* be alwayes of neceſſitie againſt the law of nature, it deſerves the firſt conſideration in this ſecond part, to inquire how farre humane Lawes have determin'd againſt it, before wee deſcend to the arguments of particular Authors, of whatſoever reverence or authoritie.

a *Dig. l. 1. tit. 3 le. 1. lex eſt.*

SECT. III.

1. Of lawes, the Imperiall law ought firſt to be conſidered.

And becauſe in this diſquiſition, that law hath moſt force and value, which is moſt generall, and there is no law ſo generall, that it deſerves the name of *Jus gentium*; or if there be, (a) it will bee the ſame, (as wee ſaid before) as *Recta Ratio*, and ſo not differ from the law of Nature.

a *Dig. l. 1. T. 1. le. 9. omnes.*

To

To my understanding, the Civill or Imperiall law, having had once the largest extent, and being not abandon'd now, in the reason, and essence, and nature thereof, but onely least the accepting of it should testifie some dependencie upon the Empire, we owe the first place in this consideration to that Law.

2 The reason of that law is not abolished, but our dependency upon it.

This therefore which we call the Civill Law, (for, though properly the Municipall Law of every Nation be her Civill Law, yet *Romes* Emperors esteeming the whole world to be one City, as her Bishops doe esteeme it one Dioceſſe, the *Romane* Law hath wonne the name of Civill Law, being a (b) decoction and composition of all the Regall Lawes, Decrees of the Senate, *Plebescites*, *Responsa Prudentum*, and Edicts of Emperors, from 1400. yeares before *Justinian*, to so long time after, as the *Easterne* Emperors made them authentique; being of such largenesse, as (c) *Justinians* part thereof consists of 150000. of those distinctions which he calls verses, and is the summe and marrow of many millions, extracted from 2000. Volumes.

3 Why this is called civill Law.

4 Of the vastnes of the books from whence it is concocted, and and of the extent thereof.

b *Justinian. ep. ad Trebonian.*

c *Justinian epi. ad DD. de Jur. docend. arte.*

This Law which is so abundant, that (d) almost all the points controverted betweene the *Romane* and the reformed Churches, may be decided and appointed by it. This Law, I say, which both by penalties, and Anathemaes, hath wrought upon bodies, fortunes, and consciences, hath pronounced nothing against this *Selfe-homicide*, which we have now in disputation.

d *Wem. Theolog. Iur.*

5 Nothing in this law against our case.

It

6. Of the law of *Adrian.*

It is true that of *Adrian* the Emperor, who was about 120. yeares after Christ, we finde one Rescript, in the body of the Law, [(d) *That if a Souldier do attempt to kill himselfe, and not effect it, except he offred it upon impatience of griefe, or sicknesse, or sorrow, or some other cause,* capite plectatur.] Which Rescript is repeated againe in another (e) Title, and there (though the other generall clause, or some other cause, might seeme to have reach'd farre inough,) are added especially for excusing causes, [*wearinesse of life, madnesse, or shame.*] You see with what moderate gradations this Law proceeded, which being (as it seemes) to contend and wrestle with a thing customary, and naturally affected, extends not at all to punish it when it is done, as in many other crimes the Lawes doe, by confiscation, and by condemning the memory of the delinquent, and ignobling his race.

d *Dig. lib.* 48. *tit.* 19. *le.* 3. *Si quis aliquid.* § *Qui miles.*

e *Dig. lib.* 49. *tit.* 16. *le.* 6. *Omne delictum.*

Nor embraces it all manners of doing it; (yea scarce any, considering how benignly, and favorably penall Lawes are to be interpreted:) Nor overtakes it all men, but onely such as being of present use, as well much disadvantage might grow to the Army, if sodainly any numbers of them should be suffered to turne upon this naturall and easie way of delivering themselves from painfull danger, as much dammage to the State, if those men matriculated for Souldiers, to whom there belong'd by the lawes, as many priviledges and immunities under the *Romane* Emperors, as ever

ver did to the Clergy under their *Romane* Bishops, after they had thus maym'd themselves, and defrauded the State of their service, should by this inhærent character of Souldiership, enjoy all those advantages, which those Lawes afforded them.

There is (h) one law more in the body of the Civill Law, which seemes to reach farther, because it binds not it selfe to any one condition of men; which is, [*That if a man already accus'd, or taken in the manner, for any such crime, upon which his goods should be forfeited upon conviction, kill himselfe before judgement, his goods shall be forfeit*;] else nor. For the Law addes her opinion of the fact. [*Non facti celeritas est obnoxia, sed conscientiæ metus*] And proceeds, [*Qui causam mortis habet, habeat successorem.*] So that that Law presumes there are just causes to worke such an effect. And upon the consideration of this Civill Law, I determin'd to bestow this first Distinction.

h *Dig. l.* 48. *tit.* 21. *le.* 3. *Qui rei.*

7 Of the other law for guilty men.

Distinction II.

SECT. I.

THat which they call the Canon Law is of larger extent then this; for it reaches to bind the Princes themselves, at least by their acceptation and submission to it.

1 Of the Canon Law.

2 The largnes of the ſubject, and object thereof.

And as the ſubject of it, is greater, being people and Prince; ſo is the object, being the next and eternall life. Yea it is ſo vaſt and undetermin'd, as we know not in what books to ſeeke the limits thereof, nor by what rules to ſet the land-marks of her jurisdiction.

3 Of *Codex Canonum*, or the body of the law, in uſe in the primitive Church.

For, (for the booke,) it is evident that the Primitive Church had *Codicem Canonum*, which was inſerted into the body of the *Romane* Law, and had no other ſubſiſtence, but as it was incorporated there. Thereupon (a) *Gelatius* writes to *Theodorus* the *Goth*, King of *Italy*, to intreat him, that as by his authoritie the *Romane* Law was obſerved in Civill matters, ſo it might be ſtill in Eccleſiaſtique. And after the expulſion of the *Goths*, (b) *Leo* 4. intreated and obtained the ſame from *Lotharius*. From this *Codex Canonum*, the Emperors determined and decreed in many Eccleſiaſtique cauſes; From this *Codex* the Councels after were governed in making their Canons: as wee may ſee particular Canons of this Booke cited, the booke being often call'd for in the Councels, and being then ordinarily named, *The body of the Canon Law*. This body conſiſted of the Canons of nine Councels authorized by the Emperors.

a *Dist.* 10. *certum eſt.*

b *Dist.* 10. *veſtrum.*

4 Of the Additions to this *Codex*.

But for thoſe immenſe additions growne to it ſince that time, of Bulls, and Decretall Letters of Popes, Decrees of ſuſpitious and partiall and Schiſmatick Councels, (for nothing is more properly Schiſme, and *Solutio continui*, than a rent betweene the Civill and Eccleſiaſtique State, which occa-

occasion'd many of the later Councels,) the rags of Fathers decerpted and decocted by *Gratian*, and the glosses of these made also as authentique as the Text. I perceive not what title they have to bee of the body of the Canon Law, except where the Princes have incorporated and denizen'd them.

But least to quarrell with their authority now, might seeme in us a subter-fuge and shift to decline them, as though they were heavy against us, in this point which we have now in hand; wee will accept them as they are obtruded, and dissemble nothing, which in them seemes to resist this opinion, though in common entendment this law is likely to be severe against it, because the civill lawes content themselves ever with any excuse or colour in favour of the Delinquents, because when a fault is proved it punishes severely, but c) the Canon Lawes which punish onely medicinally, and for the soules health, are apt to presume or beleeve a guiltinesse, upon light evidence, because those punishments ever worke good effects, whether just or no.

5 Canon law apter to condemne then Civill, and why.

c *Palcotus de notbis c.* 19.

SECT. II.

And first because heresie which is *Læsa Majestas Divina*, of all crimes is the principall object of that Court, I say, that this proposition, is not by any thing extant in the Canon law, (and therefore not at all) heretical, allowing to them their largest

1 That this proposition is not heretical.

largeſt definition of hereſie; which is, (a)[*Any thing which is againſt Catholique faith, that is Scriptures rightly unaerſtood; Or the traditions and definitions of the Church, or generall Councells lawfully gathered, or difinition of the ſea Apoſtolique, or the common opinion of Fathers, in a matter of faith.*] The propoſition may perchance ſeeme to ſome ſo ill qualified, as it may be *male ſonans*, or *temeraria*, or perchance *ſapiens hereſis*, for all theſe proceed from the indiſpoſition and diſtempred taſte of the apprehendor, which muſt not alwaies be idly flattred and pampred, but invited to the ſearch and diſcovery of truth, who elſe being the greateſt Prince in the world, ſhould have no progreſſe, but be ſtraightned in a wretched corner. Firſt therefore, (to caſt a glance upon every part of the definition of hereſie) whether it be againſt the Scriptures rightly underſtood or no will be more properly and naturally examined, when we come to the laſt part, which is of Divine law.

a *Sinancha Enchirid. Iud: tit. 24. nu. 2.*
2 A large definition of hereſie.

Next, there is no tradition nor definition of the Church in the point at all, much leſſe as of a matter of faith, which is the ſecond limbe of the definition.

3 No definition of the Church in the point.

No decree of any generall Councell. No reſcript or Bull of any Pope. And for the common opinion of the Fathers (beſides that it can be no ſafe rule, becauſe (b) as [*Azorius notes, Controverters often ſay on both ſides, this is the common opinion; And certainely that is the common opi-*

4 Nor Canon
5 Nor Bull.
b *Moral. Inſtit. to. 1. l. 2. c. 13.*
6 Of the common opinion of Fathers, how it varies in times and places.

nion in one Age which is not in another; yea, in one Kingdome at the ſame time, which is not in another, though both be Catholik: As in Germany *and* France, *by the common opinion* Latreia *is not due to the Croſſe, in* Spaine *by the common opinion it is,*] it cannot appeare, by the Canon law, that this is the common opinion of the Fathers; for (c) *Gratian* who onely of the Compilers of the Canon law toucheth the point, (as farre as either my reading or ſearch hath ſpied out) cites but two Fathers, *Auguſtine*, and *Hierome*. Whereof the latter is of opinion, that there may be ſome cauſe to do it. But in the Canon law I finde no words, not onely to lay the infamous name of hereſie upon it, but that affects it with the mark or ſtile of ſinne, or condemnes the fact, by inflicting any puniſhment upon the offender.

c 23. q. 5. 7 *Gratian* cites but two fathers, one of which is of our ſide.

I ſpeake here of the Canon law, to which the Canoniſt will ſtand: which are the Decretall letters, and all the extravagants. For, of *Gratians Decret.* that learned and ingenious Biſhop of *Tarracon*, hath taught us what we ſhould thinke, when he ſayes, [(d) *That he is ſcarce worth ſo much reprehenſion; who having nothing that is profitable or of uſe, except he borrows it, is admired of the ignorant, and laughed at of the learned,*] (e) [*who never ſaw the bookes of the Councells, nor the works of the Fathers, nor the Regiſters of the Popes letters.*] (f) *And whoſe compilation had not that confirmation from* Eugenius 3, *as is falſly attributed to it.*] Yet allthough *Gratian* have not ſo much authority, that

8 Of that part of the Canon Law, to which Canoniſts will ſtand.

d *Anto. Auguſtin. l. de emendat. Gratian. l. 1. dial. 1. de titulo.*
9 A Cathol. Biſhops cenſure of *Gratians* Decret.
e *Idem dial. 4.*
f *Idem dial. 3.*

by his inſerting an imperiall law, or fragment of a Father, it ſhould therefore be canoniz'd and grow into the body, and ſtrength of the Canon law, (for then though that law were abrogated againe by the Emperour, it ſhould ſtill be alive and binde by a ſtronger obligation in the Canon, which (g) *Alb. Gentilis* proves to be againſt the common opinion.) yet by conſent, thus much is afforded him, that places cited by him, have as much authority in him, as they had in the Author from whom he tooke them. And therefore when we come to handle the Reaſons of particular Authors, we will pretermit none whom *Gratian* hath cited, for that is their proper place.

g *De libris juris Canon. c.* 2.

SECT. III.

1 What any Councels have done in this point.

And in this Diſtinction where we handle the opinion of the Canon Law in the point (not becauſe *Gratian* cites it, but becauſe the Canons of all Councels are now uſurped as Canon Law) we will conſider (a) a Canon of the *Braccarenſe* Councell cited by him.

a 23. q. 5. *placuit.*

But firſt, (although he have it not) wee will not conceale the (b) *Antiſidorenſe* Councel, (which was before the other, under *Gregor.* 1. *Anno* 590.) For as the Civill Lawes by limitation of perſons and cauſes, gave ſome reſtraint and correction to this naturall deſire of dying when we would, which they did out of a duty to ſinew and ſtrengthen, as much as they were able

b *Concil. Antiſidor. ſub Greg.* 1. *An.* 590.

able, the Doctrine of our blessed Saviour, who having determined all bloudy sacrifices; enlightens us to another Doctrine, that to endure the miseries & afflictions of this life, was wholsome, and advantagious to us; the Councels also perceiving that this first ingraffed and inborne desire, needed all restraints, contributed their help.

This (c) Canon then hath these words, [*If any kill themselves, Istorum oblata non recipiantur.*] For it seemes, that Preaching and Catechizing had wrastled, and fought with their naturall appetite, and tamed them to a perplexity whether it might be done or no; and so thinking to make sure worke, in an indiscreet devotion, they gave oblations to the Church, to expiate the fault, if any were. These oblations the Councell forbids to bee accepted, not decreeing any thing of the point, as of matter of faith, but providing against an inconvenient practice.

Neither was it much obligatory, or considerable, what it had decreed, being onely (d) a Dioceſan Councell, of one Bishoppe, and his Abbats, and whose Canons *Binnius* presents, because (though some of them be out of use, of which this may be one) yet they are (saies he) some discoverers of Antiquity.

The other Councell which (e) *Gratian* cites and besides which two I finde none) hath these words, [*For those that kill themselves, there shall be no commemoration at the oblation, nor shall they bee brought to buriall with Psalmes.*] which intimates, as

c *Canon.* 17. 3 The Councel of *Antisid.* onely refused their oblations

3 This was but a Dioceſan Councell. d *Notæ Binnij in Conc. Antis. To.2. f.* 955.

e 23. q. 5. *placuit.* 4 The *Braccar* Councel inflicts two punishments.

as the language of the Canon Law is, *Caninam sepulturam.*

But the (f) glosse upon this doth evict from another Canon, that if the person were not under excommunication, it is not so; [*For we may communicate with him dead, with whom we may communicate living.*] Which showes that his act of dying so, put him not into worse state in this respect. This answers the first punishment inflicted by that Canon. And for the second which is deniall of Christian buriall, it is very rigorous to conclude a hainousnesse of the fact, from that, since the (g) true Canon Law denyes that to men slaine at Tilt, though it afford them, if they be not presently dead, all the Sacraments applyable in that extreamitie, as Penance, Eucharist, and Unction.

So that, though since it denies buriall to men whom they esteeme in state and way of salvation, the Glosse here collects reasonably, [*That this punishment reaches not to the dead, but onely to deterre the living*;] referring to this purpose an (h) Epistle of *Gregory*, saying, [*So much as a sumptuous funerall profits a wicked man, so much a base, or none at all hurts a godly.*]

Lastly, that (i) *Clementine* which reckons up many causes for which Christian buriall is denyed, amongst which one is a locall interdict, at what time the holyest man which dyes in that place cannot bee buried, which sometimes extends to whole Kingdomes, instructs us sufficiently

f 24. q. 2. *Sane quid.*

5 The first, not praying for them, is of the n who did it when they were excommunicate.

g *Decret. l.* 5. *tit.* 13. *de torneamentis.*

6 The second, which is deniall of buriall, is not alwayes inflicted for offences; as appears in an interdict locall.

h 13. q. 2. *anim.*

i *Li.* 3. *tit.* 7. *de sepulchris. Eos qui.*

ently, that one may be subject to that punishment, (if it be any in that Law) and yet not guilty of such a crime as this is reputed to be.

And (k) the *Romans* in their Religious Discipline, refused solemne buriall, to any which perished by lightnings, (l) though they buried offenders in the towne, as they did Vestals and Emperours; because as their Dedication to God had delivered the Nunnes, and Soveraigntie the Emperours from bondage of Law; so did Justice, to which they had made full satisfaction deliver offenders punished. And since both Saint *Hierome*, and the *Bracarense* Councell, inflict the same punishments upon those *Catechumeni*, who although they had all other preparations, and degrees of maturity in the Christian Faith, yet departed out of this world without Baptisme, as they doe upon *Selfe murtherers*, and so made them equall in punishment, and consequently in guiltinesse; I thinke it will ill become the Doctrines of our times, and the *Analogy* thereof, to pronounce so desperately of either of their damnations. *Sert. Senen. lib. 6. Annot. 7. p. 311.*

And here wee end our second Distinction of this second Part, which was allotted for the examination of the Canon Law.

k *Sylv. ad leg. Reg. c. 11.*

l *P. Manut. de leg. Rom.* 7 *Romans* buried such offenders as had satisfied the Law within the towne, as Vestals, and Emperors.

Distinction III.

SECT. I.

1 Of the laws of particular Nations.

OF Arguments of this Nature, which are concluſions deduced out of reaſon and diſcourſe, next to theſe generall Lawes of the Empire, and of the Church, (which though it might ſeeme for the generality thereof, to have deſerved the firſt place, we handled in the ſecond roome, becauſe the power thereof hath beene ever litigious and queſtionable,) I may juſtly ranke the Lawes of particular ſtates.

2 Of our law of *Felo de ſe*. *Bract. f.* 150. a

By our Law therefore, as it hath not beene long in practiſe, (for (a) *Bracton* ſeemes not to know ſuch a Law, when allowing an intire chapter to that title, he onely repeats the words in that Emperiall Law, which I cited before, and ſo admitts, (if he admit that Law, that exception, *Sine juſta cauſa*) he which kills himſelfe is reputed *felo de ſe*; and whether he be chargeable with any offence or no, he forfeits his goods; which devolving to the Kings Almoner, ſhould on the Kings behalfe be employed in pious and charitable uſes.

b *Plowd. Com. Hales* his caſe. 3 That this is murder in our law; And the reaſons which entitle the King.

And (b) it is not onely Homicide, but Murder, And yet the reaſons alledged there, are but theſe, That the King hath loſt a Subject, that his Peace is broken, and that it is of evill example.

Since

Since therefore, to my understanding, it hath no foundation in Naturall nor Emperall Law, nor receives much strength from those reasons, but having by custome onely put on the nature of law, as most of our law hath, I beleeve it was first induced amongst us, because we exceeded in that naturall desire of dying so. For it is not a better understanding of nature, which hath reduced us from it; But the wisedome of Law-makers and observers of things fit for the institution and conservation of states.

4 Our naturall desire to such dying, probably induced this law.

For in ancient Common-wealths, the numbers of slaves were infinite, as ever both (c) in *Rome* and *Athens*, there were 10 slaves for one Citizen; and (d) *Pliny* sayes that in *Augustus* time, *Isidorus* had above 4000. And (e) *Vedius Pollio* so many, that he alwayes fed his fish in ponds with their blood; and since servitude hath worne out, yet the number of wretched men exceeds the happy (for every labourer is miserable and beastlike in respect of the idle abounding men;) It was therefore thought necessary by lawes, and by opinion of Religion, (as (f) *Scævola* is alleaged to have said, *Expetit in Religione Civitates falli*,) to take from these weary and macerated wretches, their ordinary and open escape, and ease, voluntary death.

5 As in States abounding with slaves, the Law-makers quenched this desire.

c *Bodin Rep. l.* 1. *c.* 2. *& l.* 6. *c.* 1.

d *l.* 33. *c.* 10.

e *Schast. Med. de Venat. Pisca. et aucup. q.* 41.

f *Aug. de Civi. Dei l.* 4. *c.* 27.

And therfore it seemes to be so prohibited, as a (g) Lawyer sayes, hunting and usery is, [*Ne inescarentur homines*] and as (h) *Mahomet* to withdraw his Nation from wine, brought them

6 Least it should draw too fast, as Hunting and Usury are; and as wine by *Mahom.*

g *Pruckman. de Venat. Pisc. & Aucup. c.* 4.

h *Pompon. de Incantat. c.* 10.

to a religious beliefe, that in every grape there was a Devill.

7 And as severe lawes against stealing

As therefore amongst us a naturall disease of stealing, (for as all other, so this vice may as well abound in a Nation as in a particular man, and i) *Dorotheus* relates at large the sickenesse of one of his fryars, who could not abstaine from stealing, though he had no use of that which he stole) hath drawn from a (k) Councell holden at *London* under *Hen* 3. a Canon which excommunicates the Harbourers of Theeves (*quibus abundat Regio Angliæ*, and mentions no other fault but this, and from the Custome, and Princes, and Parliaments severe Lawes against theft, then are justifiable by Nature, or the Iewes Judiciall Law, (for our Law hangs a man for stealing in extreame necessity, when not onely all things, to him, returne to their first community, but he is bound in conscience to steale, and were, in some opinions, (though others say he might neglect this priviledge) a *Selfe-murderer* if he stole not.

i *B. Dorotheus doct.* 11.

k *Binnius to* 3. *par* 2 *f.* 1476. *An.* 1237.

8 When a man is bound to steale.

9 *Scotus* opinion of day theeves:

And (l) *Scotus* disputing against the Lawes of those Nations, which admit the death of a theife robbing by day, because (m) whoever kills such a theife, is expresly by Gods Law a murderer, ask where have you read an exception of such a theife from the Law, *Non occides*, or where have you seene a Bull fallen from Heaven to justifie such executions? So it may be, a naturall declination in our people to such a manner of death,

l 4. *Dist.* 15. *q.* 3.

m *Exod.* 22. 3.

death, which weakned the ſtate, might occaſion ſeverer Lawes, then the common ground of all Lawes ſeemes well to beare.

And therefore, as when the Emperour had made a Law, to cut off a common abuſe of miſdevout men, that no man might give any thing to the Clergy, no not by Teſtament, Saint *Hierome* ſaid, I lament and grieve, but not that ſuch a Law is made, but that our manners have deſerved ſuch a Law, ſo doe I in contemplation of theſe Lawes mourne, that the infirmity and ſickneſſe of our Nation ſhould neede ſuch Medecines.

The like muſt be ſaid of the like Law in the Earldome of *Flaunders*; If it be true, (n) That they allow confiſcation of goods, in onely five caſes, whereof this is one; and ſo it is rankt with Treaſon, Hereſie, Sedition, and forſaking the Army againſt the Turk, which be ſtrong and urgent circumſtances to reduce men from this deſire.

n *Tholoſa. Syn. l. 36. c. 22. nu. 13. ex Buteler. in ſumma rurali.*

10 Of ſuch a law in *Flaunders.*

SECT. II.

For whereſoever you finde many and ſevere Lawes againſt an offence it is not ſafe from thence to conclude an extreame enormity or hainouſneſſe in the fault, but a propenſneſſe of that people, at that time, to that fault. Thereupon (a) *Ignatius* and many others, even intire Councells, were forced to pronounce, that whoſoever

1 Severe lawes are arguments of the peoples inclination, not of the hainouſneſſe of the fault.

a *Epiſt. ad Philip.*

soever fasted upon Sundayes were Murderers of Christ.

So in *France* the Lawes abound against Duells, to which they are headlongly apt.

So are the resolutions of the Spanish Casuists, and the Bulls of the Popes, iterated and aggravated in that Nation, against there Bull-bayting, to which they are so enormously addicted, which yet of it selfe is no sinne, as *Navar* retracting his opinion after 70 yeares holds at last.

These severe lawes therefore do no more aggravate a fault, then milde punishments diminish it. And no man thinks Rape a small fault, though *Solon* punish it, if she be a Virgin, and freeborn, with so much money as would amount to our five shillings: and the (b) *Salique* law punishes a witch, which is convict to have eaten a man, pecuniarily, and at no high price. And therefore (c) *Bartolus* allowes that in cases of publique profit or detriment, the Judges may extend an odious and burdenous law beyond the letter, and restraine a favourable and beneficiall law, within it, though this be against the Nature and common practise of both these lawes.

If therefore our, and the Flemish law be severe in punishing it, and that this argument have the more strength, because more Nations concurre in such lawes, it may well from hence be retorted, that every where men are inclinable to

2 Sunday fast extremly condemned thereupon.

3 So Duells in *France*.

4 So Bull-baitings in *Spain*.

Navar. Manu. li. 15. nu. 18.

5 Gentle laws diminish not the nature of rape, nor witchcraft.

b *Cap. 67.*

c *H. de his qui not. infam. l. 2. §. 1. nu. 2.*

6 Publique benefit is the rule of extending or restraining all lawes by *Bartol.*

7 If other Nations concur in like lawes, it shews their inclination to be generall.

to it: which eſtabliſheth much our opinion, conſidering that none of thoſe lawes, which preſcribe Civill reſtraints from doing it, can make it ſinne; and the act is not much deſcredited, if it be but therefore evill, becauſe it is ſo forbidden, and binds the conſcience no farther, but under the generall precept of obedience to the law, or to the forfeiture.

SECT. III.

It ſeemes alſo by the practiſe of the *Jewes*, (for (a) *Joſephus* ſpeaks of it, as of a thing in uſe) that they did not bury ſuch as killed themſelves, till the Sunne ſet. But though I know not upon what Law of theirs they grounded this, and I finde not by writers of either of their Policies ſince their diſperſion, (for though they have no Magiſtracie, but bee under the Lawes of thoſe places into which they are admitted, in all caſes except where they be exempted by priviledg, yet they doe alſo teſtifie a particular deteſtation of ſome ſins by *outward penances* among themſelves, (b) as in theft, they binde, and whip, and enjoyne to publike confeſſion, and in Adultery the offender ſits a day in Winter in freezing water, and in Sommer upon an Anthill, or amongſt hives of Bees naked, though, I ſay, I finde not by *Galatine*, *Sigonius*, *Buxdorfius*, nor *Molther*, that this was or is in uſe amongſt them, yet becauſe *Joſephus*, though but Oratorily ſayes it, we

1 The cuſtom of the *Iewes*, and the law of the *Athenians* evict nothing.

a *De bello Jud. l. 3. c. 13.*

b *Buxdor. Syn. Iudaic c. 34.*

we will accept it; and beleeve that it was upon the reason common almost to all Nations to deterre men from doing it, and not to punish it being done. And of like use, that is, *in terrorem*, was also that Law of the *Athenians*, who cut off that hand after death which perpetrated that fact; which Law *Josephus* remembers in the same place.

SECT. IIII.

1 The reason drawne from remedies against it, proves no more.
a *Pliny. li.* 36. *cap.* 13.
b *A. Gellius li.* 15. *c.* 10.

That reason which is grounded upon the Edict of *Tarquinius Priscus*, (a) who when this desire of Death raigned amongst his men like a contagion, cured it by an opprobrious hanging up their bodies, and exposing them to birds and beasts. And (b) upon that way of reducing the Virgins of *Milesium*, who when they had a wantonnesse of dying so, and did it for fashion, were by Decree dishonourably exhibited as a spectacle to the people naked, prevailes no farther then the argument before, and proves onely a watchfull solicitude in every State, by all meanes to avert men from this naturall love of ease, by which their strength in numbers would have been very much impaired. And thus wee determine this Distinction.

SECT.

Distinct. IV.

WEe will now descend to those reasons which particular men have used for the detestation of this action. And first we will pay our debt to *Gratian*, in considering the places cited by him, and after, the other reasons of Divine Authors, if they bee not grounded upon places of Scriptures, which we repose for the last part, shall have there ventilation in this Distinction.

1. Of reasons used by particular men, being Divines.

SECT. I.

The (a) first place then, is in an Epistle of Saint *Augustine* to *Donatus* the Heretique; who having beene apprehended by the Catholikes, fell from his Horse, and would have drown'd himselfe: and after complaines of violence used towards him, in matter of Religion, wherein he claimes the freedome of Election, and conscience. Saint *Augustine* answers, wee have power to endeavour to save thy soule against thy will, as it was lawfull to us, to save thy body so. If thou wert constrained to doe evill, yet thou oughtest not to kill thy selfe. Consider whether in the Scriptures, thou finde any of the faithfull that did so, when they suffered much

1. Of S. *Augustine* and his Argument. a 23. q. 5. *Duplicet.*

from them, who would have forced them to do things to their ſoules deſtruction.

2. Of St. *Aug.* comparatively with other Fathers.

To ſpeake a little of Saint *Auguſtine* in generall, becauſe from him are derived almoſt all the reaſons of others, he writing purpoſely thereof, from the 17 to the 27 Chapter of his firſt book *De Civitate Dei*, I ſay, as the Confeſſaries of theſe times, comparing *Navar* and *Sotus*, two of the greateſt *Caſuiſts*, yeeld ſometimes that *Navar*, is the founder and learneder, but *Sotus* more uſefull and applyable to practique Divinitie; So, though Saint *Auguſtine* for ſharpe inſight, and concluſive judgement, in expoſition of places of Scripture, which he alwaies makes ſo liquid, and pervious, that he hath ſcarce been equalled therein, by any of all the Writers in the Church of God, except *Calvin* may have that honour, whom (where it concernes not points in Controverſie,) I ſee the *Jeſuits* themſelves often follow, though they dare not name him, have a high degree and reverence due to him, yet in practique learning, and morall Divinity, he was of ſo nice, and refin'd, and rigorous a conſcience, (perchance to redeeme his former licenciouſneſſe, as it fals out often in ſuch Convertits, to be extreamely zealous) that for our direction in actions of this life, Saint *Hierome*, and ſome others, may bee thought ſometimes fitter to adhere unto, then St. *Auguſtine*; Yet I ſay not this, as though wee needed this medicament for this place.

3. Compariſon of *Navar* and *Sotus*.

4 Jeſuiſts often beholden to *Calvin* for expoſitions.

For

For I agree with Saint *Auguſtine* here, That neither to avoid occaſion of ſinne, nor for any other cauſe, wherein my ſelfe am meerely or principally intereſſed, I may doe this act; which alſo ſerves juſtly for anſwer to the ſame zealous Father in the other place, (b) cited by *Gratian*; for with him I confeſſe, [*That he which kills himſelfe, is ſo much the more guilty herein, as hee was guiltleſſe of that fact for which hee killed himſelfe.*]

5. In this place we differ not from St. *Aug.*

6. Nor in the ſecond.

b 22. q. 5. *Si non.*

Though, by the way, this may not paſſe ſo generally, but that it muſt admit the exception, which the (c) Rule of Law upon which it is grounded, carries with it, [*Nemo ſine culpa puniendus, niſi ſubſit cauſa.*] And ſo, as Saint *Auguſtine*, we, with as much earneſtneſſe, ſay, [*Hoc aſſerimus, hoc dicimus, hoc omnibus modis approbamus. That neither to avoid temporall trouble, nor to remove from others occaſion of ſinne, nor to puniſh our owne paſt ſinnes, nor to prevent future, nor in a deſire of the next life,* (where theſe conſiderations are only, or principally) *it can be lawfull for any man to kill himſelfe.*] But neither Saint *Auguſtine* nor we deny, but that if there be cases, wherein the party is diſ-intereſted, and only or primarily the glory of God is reſpected and advanced, it may be lawfull.

7. That then may be *Cauſa puniendi ſine culpâ.*

c *Reg. ſur.* 6.

So that, as *Valens* the Emperour, having ſurpriſed *Famblicus*, when his divining cock had deſcribed three letters of his name who ſhould ſucceede, ſlew all whoſe names were *Theodorus*, *Theodotes*,

8. As *Valens* miſſed *Theodoſius*; So did *Auguſtine* pretermit the right cauſe.

Theodotes, or Theodulus, but escaped *Theodosius* who fulfilled the Prophecy, So Saint *Augustine* hath condemned those causes which we defend not, but hath omitted those wherein it is justifiable.

9 Of *Cordubensis* rule, how we must do in perplexities;

In which case being hard to be discern'd and distinguished from others arising from humane infirmity, if that rule which (d) *Antonius de Corduba*, gives in cases of simony, be as he sayes it is, a good guide in all perplexities, it will ease very much.

d *Ant. Cordub. de simonia q. 27. Editione. Hisp.*

10 How temporall reward may be taken for spirituall office.

He sayes, because in the case of simony, many difficulties grow, because not onely by cleare and common judgements, temporall reward may be taken for spirituall offices, by way of gift, stipend, wages, almes, sustenation, or fulfilling the law or custome of that place, but also by some Doctors, even by way of price, and bargaine, if not directly for the spirituall part thereof, yet for the labour necessarily annexed to it, because every Curate cannot distinguish in these cures, he bids him [*ever doe it, with an intention to doe it so, as God knowes it may de done, and as wise men know and would teach that it might be done: For thus saith he, humbly remitting our selves to the learned, which are our fathers instruction, what ever defect be in us, yet* Saluamur in fide parentum.] And in this sort (e) *Pindarus* making an implicite prayer to God, that he would give him that which he knew to be best for him, died in that very petition.

Hesychius vitæ philosophorum.

11 Of *Pindarus* death praying for he knew not what.

Except

Except therefore (f) Saint *Augustine* have that moderation in his resolution; That a better life never receives a man after a death whereof himselfe was guilty, we will be as bould with him, as (g) one who is more obliged to him then we, who repeating *Augustines* opinion, That the Devill could possesse no body, except he entred into him by sinne, rejects the opinions, and saies, The holy Father speaks not, of what must of necessity be, but what for the most part uses to bee.

f *Vbi supra.*

g *Thyræ. Jesuit. de Dæmoniacis c. 31. nu. 428.*

SECT. II.

And in our case we ought (as I thinke rather to follow (a) Saint *Hieromes* temper, who in his exposition upon *Jonas*, (which I wonder why *Gratian* cited being so farre from his end and advantage) sayes, [*In persecution I may not kill my selfe*, absque eo, ubi castitas periclitatur] where I am so farre from agreeing with (b) *Gratian*, that [Absque eo, *is inclusively spoken, and amounts to this phrase no not though*] as I thinke that good learned father, included in that word *Castitas*, all purity of Religion and manners; for to a man so rectified death comes ever, and every way seasonably and welcome. For [(c) *qualem mors invenit hominem, ita homo invenit mortem.*]

a In our place we depart from St. *Aug.* upon the same reason as the Jesuit *Thyræus* doth.

1 The place out of S. *Hierome* cited by *Gratian.* a 23. q. 5. Non est,

b *Gloss. in locum supra.*

c *Idiotæ Contemplatio de morte.*

SECT. III.

1 Lavater confesses Aug. Hie. Cry. and Lactan. to be of this opinion.
a Lavater in 1 Sam. Cap. xiii.

From this place of Saint *Hierome*, I beleeve, and ſome other, which perchance I have not read, and ſome other places in others, of like charitable deſcent to this opinion (a) *Lavater* having made his profit of all *Peters Martyrs* reaſons almoſt againſt this act, and adding ſome of his owne, when they both handle the duties of *Saul*, confeſſeth that in this caſe of preſerving Chaſtity, *Auguſtine*, *Chryſoſtome*, and *Lactantius*, and *Hierome* departed from their opinion who condemned this Act.

SECT. IIII.

1 Of P. Mar. reaſon *Mors malum.*

Peter Martyr alſo preſents one other reaſon, of which he ſeemes glad, and well contented in it, which is, That we may not haſten death, becauſe *Mors malum.*

a *Stromat. l. 4.* 2 *Clement.* hath long ſince deſtroyed that opinion.

But it is not worthy of his gravity, eſpecially ſo long after (a) *Clemens Alex.* had ſo throughly defeated that opinion.

3 Of *Malum pœnæ.*
b *Aqui. 1. q. 48. ar. 6. Con.*
c Jo. 9. 3.

But if it be *Malum*, it is but *Malum pœnæ.* And that is an evill of which God is Authour, and is not that (b) *Malum quo mali ſumus*; neither doth it alwayes prove the patient to be evill, (though God for all that be alwaies iuſt,) for himſelfe ſaid of the man borne blinde (c) [*Neither he, nor his parents have ſinned.*]

And

And of that *Malum pœnæ*, which is esteemed the greatest in this life, of temporall afflictions, because of the neere danger of empairing our soule, which is to be possessed, (d) *Thyræus*, from Saint *Hierome* and *Chrysostome* sayes, that it is not alwayes inflicted for sinne, but to manifest the glory of God.

And therefore the greatest evill which can be imagined, of this kinde of evill, which is [(e) *Damnation, hath not so much* Rationem mali, *as the least sinne that drawes Damnation.*]

Death therefore is an act of Gods justice, and when he is pleased to inflict it, he may chuse his Officer, and constitute my selfe as well as any other.

And if it were of the worst sort of evill, yet as (f) Saint *Augustine* sayes that [*in the Act of Marriage, there is* Bonus usus mali, id est concupiscentiæ, quo malo male utuntur adulteri.] And as good *Paulinus* prayses *Severas*, that (g) [*he having* in Conjugio peccandi licentiam, *departed not from his accustomed austerity*,] so may the same be said of death in some cases, as in Martyrdome.

For though *Martyr* urge farther, that death is called (h) Gods enemy, and is therefore evil, yea (i) *Musculus* sayes upon that place, [*It is often commended in Scriptures, because towards the faithfull God useth it to good ends, and makes it* cooperari ad salutem.] And by what authority can they so assuredly pronounce that it falls out never

4 Possessed men are not alwaies so afflicted for sin.
d *Thyræus de Dæmon. c.* 31.

e *Aqui.* 1. *q.* 48. *ar.* 6. *Con.*

5 Damnation ha.h not so much *rationem mali* as the least sin.

6 If death were of the sorts of evill, yet there may be good use of it.
f *Aug. de bono Conjugii.*
g *Paulin. Severo epist.* 1.

7 How *Paul* calls Death Gods enemy.
h 1 *Cor.* 15. 20.
i *Marlorat. in hunc locum.*

never in our caſe? Beſides this, death hath loſt much of her naturall malignity already, and is not now ſo ill, as at firſt ſhe was naturally; for as (k) *Calvin* notes here, [*ſhe is already ſo deſtroyed, that ſhe is not* lethalis, *but* moleſta.]

8 Death ſince Chriſt is not ſo evill as before.
k *Calvin in hunc locum.*

SECT. V.

One reaſon more *Martyr* offers of his owne which is, *Vita Donum*, life, becauſe it is the gift of God may not be profuſed; but when we have agreed to him, that it may not be unthriftily and prodigally caſt away, how will he conclude from thence, ſuch an ingratitude, as that I ſhall forſake Gods glory? and may in no caſe *ponere animam?* How will it follow from I muſt not alwaies, to I may never?

1 Of *Martyrs* reaſon, *Vita donum.*

SECT. VI.

Lavater after many other urges this reaſon; That becauſe Judges are eſtabliſhed, therefore no man ſhould take Dominion over himſelfe.

But in the Church of *England*, where auricular confeſſion is not under precept, nor much in practiſe, (for that we admit it not at all, or refuſe it ſo, as the *Waldenſes* did, though (a) a reverend man ſay it, is more then I knew) who is judge of ſin againſt which no civill law provides, or of which there is no evidence? May not I accuſe and condemne my ſelfe to my ſelfe, and inflict

1 Of *Lavaters* reaſon of Judges.
2 Where confeſſion is not in uſe, there is no exterior Judge of ſecret ſinne.
a *Humfred. Ieſui. pa. 2. ad Ratio. 3. Cam.*

inflict what penance I will for punishing the past, and avoiding like occasion of sinne?

Upon this reason depends that perplexed case, whether the Pope may not give himselfe absolution from Acts and Vowes, and partake his owne indulgences, although by the best opinion it is agreed, that to do so is an act of jurisdiction, which by *Lavaters* rule, no man may exercise upon himselfe.

3 Of the Popes jurisdiction over himselfe.

(b) The Emperiall lawes forbid in a generality any to be judge in his owne cause, but all Expositors, except Soveraignes. And in ordinary Judges, all agree with (c) *Balaus* [*That in facto notorio if the dignity of the Iudge be concerned, he is the proper Iudge of it. And he sayes that it belongs to the Pretor to judge, whether such a cause belong to his judgement, or no.*] (d) And with a *Non obstante* even upon Naturall law, as the words of the privilege are, *Theodorius* allowed Bishops to be Judges in their owne cause. (e) So [*if a sonne which had not beene* Sui juris *had beene made Consul, he might have emancipated himselfe, or authorized another to have adopted him.*]

4 Of such jurisdiction in other persons by civill lawes.

b *C. d. l. 3. tit. 5. le. Generali.*

c *Bal. F. le. 5. de. judiciis.*

d *Filesacus de Epise. autorit. Ca. 1. §. 17.*

e *Dig. l. 1. tit. 7. le. 3. si Cons.*

And besides that, it appeares, that the Popes have exercised jurisdiction upon themselves, even before they were Popes, (for (f) *John 22* having permission to chuse one Pope, chose himselfe, which deed *Naucler* relates and justifies) by Canonicall rules it is plaine, that a man may exercise jurisdiction upon himselfe in any case where there is not a distinction of persons

5 *Joh. 22.* elected himselfe Pope.

f *Volat. 2. Genera. 44.*

enjoyned *Iure Divino*, as in Baptisme: which will not be stretched to our case.

6. Jurisdiction over our selves is denyed us, because we are presumed favourable to our selves; Not in cases hurtfull to our selves.

And certainly the reason of the Law, why none should be judge in his owne cause, is, because every one is presumed favourable towards himselfe. And therefore if it be dispensable in some cases beneficiall to a man, much more may it be in cases of inflicting punishment, in which none is imagined to be over-rigorous to himselfe.

g *Heurnius de Philos. Barbar.*

And if man were by nature as slavish, as the [(g) *Esseni* by profession and rule, who had power of themselves in nothing, but *juvando & miserendo*] I see not, but when this becomes an act of advantage to our selves, we may have jurisdiction enough to doe it.

7. Even in cases hurtfull, we have such jurisdiction.

And what is more evident to prove, that in some cases derogatory and prejudiciall to us, we have this right over our selves, then that every man may *cedere suo jure*, And *Non uti privilegio*.

h *Theod. a Nice. l. 3. c. 3. & 23.*

8. *Gregories* oath in the great Scisme.

And (h) it was by all condemned in *Gregorie*, in the great Scisme, that after hee had promised to depart from the Papacie, by oath, in which was a clause, that he should neither aske, give, nor accept absolution from that oath, hee induced his Mendicants to preach, that it were deadly sinne in him to de-relinquish the Church. So also have many Kings departed from their Government, and despoiled them of their burden, at their pleasure. For, as (i) one sayes,

i *Schlusselburgius. Catul. Hereticos, l. 13.*

of

of the whole Church, it may bee ſaid of every particular member; it was ever in Politicall bondage, but not in Spirituall.

So that, if there bee caſes, wherein one may aſſuredly, or probaly, after juſt diligence uſed, conclude upon an illumination of the Spirit of God, or upon a ceaſing of the reaſon of the Law at that time in him, that man is then *Sui Iuris*.

9. When a man becomes to be *ſui juris*.

For though in caſes where there is a proper Court, I am bound to it; yet, as Kings which are both Soveraignes, may therefore juſtly decide a cauſe by Warre, becauſe there can bee no competent Judge between them; So in ſecret caſes betweene the Spirit of God, and my conſcience, of which there is not certainly conſtituted any exteriour Judge, we are our ſelves ſufficient to doe all the Offices; and then delivered from all bondage, and reſtored to our naturall libertie, we are in the ſame condition as (k) Princes are, who if in the rigour of words they may not properly bee ſaid to give themſelves Priviledges, have yet one generall inherent Privilege, and when they will, they may declare, that in that particular caſe, they will not take a new, but exerciſe their old Priviledge.

10. Warre is juſt betweene Soveraigne Kings, becauſe they have no Judge.

k *Accacius de privileg. juris. l. 1. cap. 7.*

11. Princes give not themſelves priviledges, but declare that in that caſe they will exerciſe their inherent priviledge.

SECT. VII.

Joſephus Reaſon of *Depoſition.*

And becauſe (a) *Ioſephus* hath one reaſon which

a *De bell. Iud. l. 3. ca. 13.*

which tasts of Divinitie, we will consider it in this place. He sayes, our Soule is, *particula Dei*, and deposed and committed in trust to us, and we may not neglect or dishabour it, before he withdraw it. But we are still upon a safe ground, That whensoever I may justly depart with this life, it is by a Summons from God; and it cannot then bee imputed to any corruption of my will; for, (b *Velle non creatur, qui obsequitur Imperio.* Yet I expect not ever a particular inspiration, or new commission, such as they are forced to purchase for *Sampson*, and the rest; but that resident and inherent grace of God, by which he excites us to works of morrall, or higher vertues.

b *Regula juris* 4.

And so, when it is so called for againe, (c) it were a greater injustice in us to deny or withhold any thing, of which wee were *Depositaries*, then if we were Debtors; yea, (not to depart from *Josephus* Allusion or Metaphor of *Depositum*. It it were a fault to let goe that of which I were *Depositary*, before it were truely called for, yet in *Conscientia errante*, I were excusable; for it (d) is [*Ex substantia depositi, ut depositarius tantum de dolo teneatur non de culpa.*] Yea, when (e) I have a secret from another, *Data fide*, I have this in all respects, in *Natura Depositi*; and yet no man doubts, but that I may in many cases, depart with this secret.

c *Arist. Probl. Sect.* 29. *q.* 2. 2. In these cases a depositarie cannot bee accused *De culpa*, if he be *sine Dolo*. 3. A secret received, *Data fide*, is in *Natura depositi*.

d *Tholos. Syntag. l* 23. *ca.* 3. *Nu.* 17.

e *Soto de Teg. Secr. membr.* 1. *q.* 1.

SECT.

SECT. VIII.

There are many Metaphoricall and Similitudinarie Reasons, scattered amongst Authors, as in *Cicero* and *Macrobius*, made rather for illustration, then for argument or answer; which I will not stand to gleane amongst them, since they are almost all bound up in one sheafe, in (a) that Oration of *Josephus*. Or else will be fitly handled in those places of Scripture, which make some such allusions.

1. Of similitudinary Reasons in Authors not Divine.

a *De Bello Iud. l. 3. ca. 14.*

SECT. IX.

Josephus then in that Oration hath one Reason drawen from the custome of an Enemy. We esteeme them enemies, who attempt our lives, and shall we bee enemies to our selves? But besides that, in this place, *Iosephus* speakes to save his owne life, and may justly be thought to speak more *ex animo*, and dispassioned, wherein the (a) person of *Eleazar* hee perswades to kill themselves, there is neither certaine truth in the Assertion, nor in the Consequence. For do we esteeme God, or the Magistrate our enemy, when by them death is inflicted? And do not Martyrs, in whose death God is glorified, kisse the Executioners, and the Instruments of their death? Nor is it unlawfull, unnaturall, or unexpedient for us, in many cases, to be so much our

1. Of his reason of *Hostis*.

a *lib. 7. c. 28.*

owne Enemies, as to deny our ſelves many things agreeable to our ſenſitive nature, and to inflict upon our ſelves many things repugnant to it, as was abundantly ſhewed in the firſt part.

SECT. X.

1. Of his reaſon of *Servus.*

In the ſame Oration he hath another alluſorie argument, [*That a Servant which runnes away, is to be puniſhed by the Law, though his Maſter bee ſevere; much more if we runne away from ſo indulgent a Maſter, as God is to us.*] But not to give ſtrength or delight to this reaſon, by affording it a long or diligent anſwer; wee ſay, In our caſe the Servant runnes not from his Maſter, but to him, and at his call obeys his voyce. Yet it is as truely, as devoutly ſayd, [*The devill is overcome by reſiſting, but the world, and the fleſh by running away.*] And the farther, the better.

Boſquier. Conc. 7.

SECT. XI.

Of his reaſon of a Pilot.

His laſt, which is of any taſte, is [*That in a tempeſt, it were the part of an idle and treacherous Pylot, to ſinke the Ship.*] But I ſay, if in a Tempeſt we muſt caſt out the moſt precious ware aboard, to ſave the lives of the Paſſengers, and the Marchant who is damnified thereby, cannot impute this to any, nor remedie himſelfe, how much more may I, when I am weather-beaten, and

and in danger of betraying that precious ſoule which God hath embarqued in me, put off this burdenous fleſh, till his pleaſure be that I ſhall reſume it? For this is not to ſinck the ſhip but to retire it to ſafe Harbour, and aſſured Anchor. And thus our fourth Diſtinction, which was to embrace the reaſons propoſed by particular Authors, whether Divine or Prophane, and aſwell Oblique and Metaphoricall, as Direct, ſhall here be determined.

LIBRARY OF THE UNION THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY, NEW YORK.

Diſtinction V.

SECT. I.

ANother ſort of Reaſons is produced from grounds of *Morall Vertues*. Of which (a) S. *Thomas* propoſeth two, which we limit for this Diſtinction; for that of Saint *Auguſtine, That it is againſt Fortitude, hath another roome.*) Firſt then *Aquinas* ſaies, it is againſt juſtice, and againſt Charity.

1. Of *Aquin.* two reaſons, from Juſtice and Charity. a 22. q. 64. ar. 5.

And the firſt in two reſpects, both becauſe he ſteales from the Univerſe, or from that State, to which his ſervice is due, one perſon, and member of the body; and alſo, becauſe he uſurpes upon the right of God. But the firſt of theſe may as well be ſaid of all who retyring themſelves

Of ſtealing away himſelfe from the State.

ſelves from functions in the Common-wealth, defraud the State of their aſſiſtance, and attend onely their owne ends, whether in this life, or the next.

3. Monaſtique retiring is, *in genere rei*, the ſame offence.

For certainely to doe even that, ſo intenſly, as we neglect our office of Society is *in genere rei*, the ſame offence, as this.

4. The better opinion, that herein is no ſinne againſt Juſtice.

But as there are many which follow *Aquinas* herein; So *Navar*, and *Sayr*, and others are upon better reaſon of opinion, that this can be no ſinne againſt Juſtice.

5. I uſurpe not upon his ſervant but am his ſervant herein.

And for the ſecond reaſon, This is not to uſurpe upon Gods Authoritie, or to deale with another's ſervant; if I become his Servant, and his Delegate, and his Commiſſioner, in doing this, when he can be no other way ſo much glorified. And though the paſſage from this life to the next, bee not generally left to our free-will, and no body be properly Lord of his own life, yet (b) [*Though we have not* Dominium, *we have* Uſum, *and it is lawfull for us, to loſe that when we will*]

b *Sayr. Theſau. Caſ. Conſc. l. 7. ca. 9. Nu. 19.*

6. Though we have not *Dominium*, wee have *Vſum* of this life, and we leave that when we will.

Betweene which negative killing, and poſitive killing, how little and narrow a diſtance there is, and how contiguous they are, we ſhall ſee in another place.

7. The State is not Lord of our life, yet takes it away.

c *Sayr. l. 7. c. 7. Nu. 2.*

It therefore the reaſon why we may not dye thus, be, becauſe we are not Lords of our own life, but only God, then the State cannot take away our life; for (c) [*That is no more Lord of our life, then we are,*] that is, ſhe cannot doe it,

it, but in cases where she is Gods Officer.

And if in this case, there were any injury done to the State, then certainly it were in the power of the State, to license a man to doe it, and he should upon such a license be excusable in conscience. For this, in the State, were but *Cedere in re suo*, which any may lawfully doe.

And lastly, if the State were injured in this, the State might lawfully recompence the dammage, upon the heire and goods of the Delinquent; which, except in those places, where expresse Lawes allow it, cannot be done.

Yet, I thinke, the better opinion, (to judge by number of Authors) will be, That if that person be of necessary use to that State, there are in it some degrees of injustice; but yet no more, then if a Generall of much use, should retire into a Monasterie. But if we may safely take this resolution, That it is not against justice, we may ease our selves of all that labour which must bee spent upon the third part; for, since the foundation of that will be principally the Commandement, *Thou shalt not kill*; If this killing be not against Justice, it is no breach of any part of the *Decalogue*, and so no sinne.

If any should thinke, that it may be an injustice to our selves, (d) *Aquinas* in the same place cleares it. And if it were possible, for a man to injure himselfe, which is not, yet this injury might be oftentimes such an one, as *Cicero* sayes, his banishment was, [*Non modo non propul-*

8. If injurie were herein done to the State, then by a license from the State, it might be lawfull.

9. And the State might recompence her domage upon the goods, or heire

10. In a man necessary there may be some injustice in this act.

d 22. q. 59. ar. 4. ad 3m.

11. No man can doe injurie to himselfe.

sanda,

sanda, sed emenda,] considering how much happinesse might recompence it.

12. The question, whether it bee against Charity, reserved to the third part.

And whether it be against Charity or no, because Charity is not properly a Morall vertue, nor of this place, because many of those places of Scripture, which we must handle in the last part, are built upon this ground of Charitie, we will not examine, till we come thither. Here I will onely say, That though it be yet under Disputation and questionable, whether this be against Charity, or no; this is certainly against Charity to pronounce so desperatly, as men use to doe, against them who fall into it.

SECT. II.

Of two reasons. Of Misery, & Pusilanimity.

Of such reasons derived from the rules of Morall vertue, *Aristotle* insinuates two. For observing that this kinde of death caught men by two baits, *Ease* and *Honour*, Against them who would dy to avoide Miserie, (a) Hee teaches *Death to be the greatest misery which can fall upon us.* Which (not to examine how it can consist with the rest of his Doctrine) was to that purpose, the most slipperie and insinuating perswasion.

a *Arist. Eth. l. 3. c. 6.*

And then, that Honour and Fame might draw none, (b) he sayes, *It is Cowardlinesse, and Dejection, and an argument of an unsufferable and impatient minde.* But of the first of these we have spoken before, in answer to one of *P. Martyrs* reasons.

b *Cap. 7.*

reasons. And of the other we shall have occasion to say inough, when wee come to a place where Saint *Augustine* sayes the same thing, and so we may ease this Distinction of that businesse.

Infra fol. 249.

Distinct. VI.

SECT. I.

HAving thus considered those Reasons, which in the best Authors are to be found, and th wed such Rules, as serve for the true understanding of them, and of all others which spring from the same, or like heads, before wee determine this Second Part, which is of the law of Reason; it shall bee requisit that wee also touch those Reasons, which on our part are by others, and may bee by us produced, by which this *Selfe-homicide* may be delivered either *a toto*, or *a tanto*

1. Of Reasons to be made on the other part.

But not to stop long upon that Law and practise in the State of *Rome*, That any who had his causes allowed in the Senate, might kill himselfe; upon which (a) *Quintilian* frames a Case, That a Sonne who by Mathematicians Predictions, was first to kill many Enemies, and then his Father; having in the warres performed the first

2. Of the Law of Rome, of asking the Senate leave to kill himselfe.
a *Declam.* 4.

3. Of the case in *Quintilian.*

part, makes petition to the Senate, that before he come to performe the laſt part, he may be admitted to kill himſelfe, and argues it for the Sonne, by many reaſons appliable to his particular caſe, and to our maine queſtion, I will haſten to our chiefe ſtrength.

SECT. II.

1. Compariſon of Deſertion and Deſtruction.

It may then give much light to this buſineſſe, if we compare Deſertion and Deſtruction, and conſider where and wherein they differ. Certainly, in Almighty God, it is not the ſame thing to forſake and to deſtroy, becauſe he owes us nothing; and ever in his forſakings there are degrees of Mercy, becauſe hee might then juſtly deſtroy us, and may after at his good pleaſure returne againe to us.

2. Of Omiſſions equall to Committings.

But betweene men who are mutuall Debtors, and naturally bound to one another, it is otherwiſe. For a Magiſtrate, or Miniſter that abandons his charge, and neglects it, deſtroies it. So ſayes (a) *Agapetus* the Deacon to *Juſtinian* the Emperour, *Privati vitium eſt patrare, principis omittere.* Yea, a private man which hinders not a mans wrong, (when it belongs to him to do it) offers it. (b) [*Fame morientem ſi non paveris, occidiſti,*] ſaith *Ambroſe.* And (c) [*That Clergie man which hinders not a manſlaughter, if hee can, is thereby irregular.*] And he which to himſelfe denies neceſſarie things, or expoſes himſelfe

a *In admonitorio.*

b *Diſt. 86. paſce.*

c *Tabula Pariſ. cenſurarum.*

ſelfe inordinatly to ſuch dangers as men uſe not to eſcape, kills himſelfe. He that is as ſure that this Medicine will recover him, as that this Poyſon will deſtroy him, is as guilty if he forbeare the Phyſicke, as if he ſwallow the Poyſon. For what is this leſſe, then to attend the ruine of a houſe, or inundation of a ſtreame, or incurſion of mad beaſts? They which compare Omiſſions, and Committings, require no more to make them equall, but that we omit ſomething which we could, and ſhould doe.

SECT. III.

Firſt, therefore in all Lawes, in ſuch faults as are greateſt, either in their owne nature, or in an irremediableneſſe when they are done, all approaches, yea the very firſt ſtep to them, hath the ſame guiltineſſe, and is under the ſame puniſhment, as the fault it ſelfe. As in Treaſon and Hereſie, the firſt conſent is the abſolute fault.

1. In great ſinnes, the firſt ſtep imprints a guiltineſſe, yet many ſteps to Self-homicide are lawfull.

And (a) we have an example of a Woman burnt for petie Treaſon, for compaſſing the death of her husband, though it were not effected.

a *Staunf. Plees de Cor. n. cap. Petie treaſon.*

Homicide is one of thoſe crying ſins, and hath ever beene reckoned *in Atrocibus*. For though the (b) *Athenians* removed all *Dracoes* Lawes by diſuſe for their extreame ſeverity, yet they retained thoſe againſt *Homicide*.

b *Elian. l. 8. caſ. 10.*

2. *Dracus* laws againſt Homicide were retained.

And this *Homicide*, (c) ſaies *Tolet*, may bee done five wayes, by 1. Commandement, by

c *Precepto 5. 3. Tolets* five Homicides.

2. Adviſe, by 3. Permiſſion, by 4. Helpe, or by the fact it ſelfe.

4. Foure of theſe were to be found in *Adams* firſt Homicide in Paradiſe.

And in the firſt and worſt Homicide committed in Paradiſe, in which were employed all the perſons in the world, which were able to concurre to evill, when though there was but one man, all the Millions which have been and ſhall be, were maſſacred at once and himſelfe too, as many of theſe kindes of Homicides were found, as was poſſible in ſo few perſons. For as (c) one notes, [*The Serpent counſailed the Woman helped, and* Adam *perpetrated*,] and wee may ſafely and reverently ſay) God permitted If then every one of theſe be a kind of Homicide, no approach towards it can be lawfull, if any bee lawfull, that is not Homicide. Let us therefore conſider how farre, and in how many of theſe waies *Selfe-homicide* may bee allowable.

c *Reuchlin. de verbo Mirifico. lib. 2. cap. 14.*

SECT. IIII.

1. Of *Volets* firſt & ſecond way by Precept, and Adviſe, or option. a *Bartol. le. Non ſolum. F. de injuriis, . Si mandato.*

Firſt therefore, though it be the common received opinion, a) [*Mandatorem, & Manadatarium eidem pœnæ ſubjici*,] Yet by the way or Precept, we cannot properly work upon our ſelves, becauſe in this act, the ſame partie muſt be agent, and patient, and inſtrument.

Nor verey properly by the ſecond way of adviſe, yet ſo neere, we may come to the nature of it, that after diſcourſe we may advitely chuſe one

part

part, and refuſe the other, (for (b) *Cujus eſt velle, ejus eſt & nolle*) and ſo we may wiſh to our ſelves, that which is naturally evill, I meane, *Malum pœnæ*; as the (c) *Eremite* by earneſt prayer obtained of God, that he might be poſſeſſed of the Devill for certaine moneths, becauſe he found in himſelfe an inclination to pride and ſecuritie.

Thus certainely in ſome caſes, we may without ſinne wiſh Death; and that not onely for enjoying the ſight of God, (for ſo (d) ſayes a holy man, *Pro viſione Dei, millies corpus noſtrum morti dare optamus*) but even to be ſo delivered from the encumbrances of this life; for ſo it hath [*rationem boni*] (e) as *Peter Martyr* argues; and then, [(f) *Nove meliorem eſt Corruptio primæ habitudinis.*]

This therefore we may wiſh; and yet it is ſo farre from being lawfull to wiſh any thing which were evill; that [(g) *It is ſinne to wiſh that any thing which is naturally evill, were not ſo, that ſo wee might then wiſh it, when it were diſcharged of that naturall illneſſe.*]

Death it ſelfe therefore is not evill, nor is it evill to wiſh it, is it evill to further that with more actuall helpe, which we may lawfully wiſh to be done?

Theſe two extreme Religions, which ſeem to avile ſecular Magiſtracie, and ſubject Monarchs either to an Ordinarie, or elſe to a Conſiſtorie, accept willingly this ſaying, *Curſe not the King, no not in*

b *Reg. Fur.* 3. 2. We may wiſh *Malum pœnæ* to our ſelves, as the Eremite did to be poſſeſſed.

c *Sulpit. in vita Martini. Dialo.* 1.

3. Wee may wiſh death for wearineſſe of this life.

d *Martialis ad Tholoſanos.*

e *Coment. in Sim. l.* 1 *c. ult.*

f *Hept. ap. Pici. l.* 7. *Prœm.*

4. It is ſin to wiſh that evill were not ſo, that then wee might wiſh it.

g *Adrian. quodlib.* 10 *ar.* 2.

5. What wee may lawfully wiſh, we may lawfully further.

6. Of wiſhing the Princes death.

in thy heart; That is, wiſh not ill to him. Nor have I obſerved that the Authors of either diſtemper have in their Books allowed, that the Subject might wiſh the death of the Prince, but in the ſame caſes, where he might contribute his actuall helpe. For both Papiſts and Puritanes teaching that a lawfull King may become a tyrant, (which to my underſtanding cannot conſiſt with the forme and right of an inheritable Monarchie.) Yet (h) one who pretends to go the middle way (and that is truely in this caſe, *Via Regia*, ſayes, [*That as well wee, as the Romaniſts eſteeme a King of another Religion a Tyrant.*] And [*That it is impoſſible to make ſuch a King, but he muſt be a Tyrant, in the opinion of one ſide.*]

And for his own opinion delivers [(i) *That no man can be bound by oath of fidelity to the Pope, upon this reaſon, becauſe he is not indeed* Vicarius Dei, *as he preſumed him, and ſwore him to be.*]

And conformably to this, (k) that book whoſe title and ſcope is of the foundation of matter of State in *France*, and (as it pretends in all *Chriſtendome*) when after it hath enraged Subjects againſt Tyrants, it comes to declare what a Tyrant is, exemplifies in the King of *Spaine*, and upon ſuch reaſons, as any Malignitie equall to that Author, may caſt upon what Prince it will.

And laſtly, who ever ſhall well compare (l) *Beccariaes* booke, with *Bezaes*, (if that other be *Bezaes*) though they differ Diametrally in many

h *Saxavia de Imp. Author. Epiſtola.* 7. In ſome opinions, falſe Religiō makes a Tirant.

i *Lib. 2. ca. 36.* 8. Why an oth of fidelity to the Pope binds no man.

k *Declaration & Proteſtation des Doctes de France. Anno* 1605. 9. Who is a Tyrant in theſe mens opinions.

Beccar. cont. lib. De. jure Magiſtrat.

ny things, yet by their colliſion and beating together, ariſe abundantly ſparkes of this peſtilent Doctrine, That as Tranquillity was, ſo now Religion is, the reaſon why wee admit Kings, and why they are none, when they neglect Religion; upon theſe Doctrines, I ſay, it is inferred, (m) [*That it is lawfull to wiſh the death of a Tyrant, or of a favourer of Heretiques, though he dye in mortall ſinne,*] To wiſh therefore, and to doe, are naturally the ſame fault; and yet, though it be (n) [*a ſinne to offer my ſelfe even to Martyrdome, only for wearineſſe of life.*] (o) [*Or to wiſh death ſimply for Impaciencie, Anger, Shame, Povertie, or Misfortune;*] yea to wiſh heaven meerely for mine owne happineſſe; yet certainely (p) S. *Paul* had ſome allowable reaſons, to *deſire to be diſſolved, and to be with Chriſt.* And (q) *Calvine* by telling us upon what reaſon, and to what end he wiſhed this, inſtructs us how we may wiſh the ſame. He ſayes, *Paul* deſired not death, for deaths ſake, for that were againſt the ſenſe of Nature, but he wiſhed it, to be with Chriſt.

Now, (beſides that, by his leave,) we deſire many things which are againſt the ſenſe of Nature, to grant that we may wiſh death to be in heaven, (though *Peter Martyr* before alledged, be of the ſame perſwaſion) is a larger ſcope, and ſomewhat more dangerous and ſlippery a graunt, then wee urge towards, becauſe herein onely the intereſt and good of the party ſeeme

m *Carbo. Caſ. Conc. Summa Summarum. Tom. 3. lib. 3. cap. 9.*

n *Sylveſt. verb. Martyr.*

o *Navar. Manual. Ca. 15. Nu. 11.*

p *Phil. 1. 23.*

10 How death may be wiſhed by *Calvine.*

q *In 2 Cor. 5. 1 Marlorate.*

Supra.

to be conſidered; And yet (a) *Emanuel Sâ* extends it farther. [*That wee may wiſh ſickneſſe to one, for his correction; and death for the good of the State; yea to our Enemie which is like to doe us much harme for avoiding this our particular damage; and we may rejoyce at his death, even for that reſpect of our owne d livery*] All which will hold as well, if we be urged with like reaſons, to wiſh it to our ſelves.

q *Eman. Sâ Aphor. Confeſ. ver. Charitas.*

11 How we may wish death to another for our owne advantage.

To conclude therefore this point, That it may become lawfull to wiſh our owne death; I will onely relate an Hiſtory, which though it be but matter of fact (if it be ſo much) yet it is of ſuch a perſon, as his acts governe and perſwade, with very many, as farre as Rules. (ſ) In the life of *Philip Nerius*, who in our age inſtituted the laſt Religion approved and eſtabliſhed in the Church of *Rome*, we read, that he being entreated (as he was ordinarily in like deſperate caſes,) to come to one *Paulus Maximus* a youth of 14. who was then ready to expire his ſoule by ſickeneſſe, before he could perfit his Sacrifice, and the office which hee had begunne, before the meſſage came to him, the young man dyed. When hee had been dead about halfe an houre, *Nerius* came, and after he had uſed ſome lowd exclamations, the youth revived againe, looked up, and talked in ſecret with *Nerius* a quarter of an houre. The diſcourſe ended, *Nerius* gave him his choiſe, whether he would live, or dye; and when the boy wiſhed death,

12 *Ph. Nerius* conſented to the death of one who wiſhed his own death.

ſ *Vita Phil. Ner. fol.* 284.

death, he gave him leave to dy againe. Now, though it were a greater miracle, then any in that book; if any man ſhould beleeve all that are in it, (for in it are attributed to *Nerius*, ſtranger things then the (t) book of Conformities imagined in Saint *Francis* (for I beleeve that Authuor purpoſed onely like *Xenophon* or *Plato*, or Sir *Thomas Moore*, to ideate and forme, then to write a credible Hiſtory, though (u) *Sedulius* have defended it, with ſo much earneſtneſſe of late; yet thus much is eſtabliſhed out of this, whether Fable or Hiſtory, that their opinion, who authoriſed this book, is, that it was lawfull in *Maximus* to wiſh his own death, ſince a man of ſo much ſanctity as *Nerius*, did approve and ſecond, and accompliſh that opinion of his.

t *Liber Conformi. Fran. & Chriſti.*

u *Sedulius Minor. adverſ. Alcor. Franciſ.*

SECT. V.

The next ſpecies of *Homicide* in *Tolets* diviſion, is Permiſſion; which when it is toward our ſelves, is by the Schoole-men uſually called Deſertion, or Dereliction, and *Mors negativa.*

1 Of *Tolets* 3. ſpecies. by permiſſion which is *Mors Negativa.*

Of which I perceive not any kinde to be more obnoxious, or indefenſible then that which is ſo common with our Delinquents, to ſtand mute at the Barre. And though Civill Lawes which are often enforced to chuſe of two evills, the leaſt, that is to ſay, the leaſt hurtfull to civility and ſociety, and muſt admit ſometimes particular miſchiefe, rather then a generall inconve-

2 Of ſtanding mute at the Barre.

nience, may excuſe this; yet, ſince out of the law of Conſcience, which can in no caſe come to be ſo entangled and perplexed, that it can be forced to chuſe any thing naturally evill, no man hath as yet, to my knowledge, impugned this cuſtome of ours, it ſeemes to me, that aſwell our Church as our State, juſtifies this Deſertion of our ſelves: and this, for ſo low and worldly a reſpect, as the ſaving of our temporall eſtate, or eſcaping the ignominy of another death.

3 Three rules from *Sotus*, *Navar*, and *Mald.* to guide us in theſe Deſertions of our ſelves.

But that we may the better diſcerne the limits, how farre theſe Omiſſions, and Deſertions, and Expoſings of our ſelves, are allowed us; firſt I muſt interpret one (a) rule, [*That charity begins with it ſelfe, to bee underſtood onely in ſpirituall things.*] For I may not doe a ſinne, to ſave (in the language of Schoole-men) the goods, or honour, or life, of the Pope; but for temporall things I muſt prefer others before my ſelfe, if a publique profit recompence my private Domage. (b) I muſt alſo lay down another rule, [*That as for my ſelfe, So for my neighbour whom I am bound to love as my ſelfe,*] I may expoſe goods, to ſategard honour, and honour, for life, and life for ſpirituall profit. And to theſe I muſt joyn a third rule, (c) [*That no man is at any time enforced to exerciſe his priviledge.*] [*For the written Law every man is bound to know, but* (d) *priviledges and exemptions from that Law, he may be excuſably ignorant of and in ſuch ignorance tranſgreſſe them.*] Hereupon it is fairly infer'd, that though every man have naturally

a *Soto. de teg. ſæret. membr. 1. q. 3.*

b *Nava. Manual.*

c *Sum. Maldo. q. 14. ar. 6.*

d *Acacius de privilegiis l. 1. cap. 9.*

rally this priviledge, to resist force with force, and be authorised by that, to lay violent hands, even upon the Popes life, as (e) *Gerson* exemplifies, or upon the Emperours, as (f) *Acacius*, when either of them exceeds the limits of their Magistracy, (for then the party becomes the Depury, and Lieutenant to Nature, which is a common and equall Soveraigne to them all.)

e *Gerson.*
f *Acacius de privile. l. 1. c. 8.*

Yet I may wayve this benefit, if I will, and even by a theefe, I may suffer my selfe to be killed, rather then kill him in that mortall sinne. (g) Which our Countryman *Sayr*, holds as the common opinion from *Sotus*, *Navar*, *Cajetan*, and many others. And none, that I have seen excepts to it, in any other person then a Souldier, or such as hath the lives and dignities of others so enwrapped in theirs, as they cannot give away themselves, but by betraying others. And this Desertion seems to bee of Naturall reason, because it is to be found in all lawes; for even in the (h) *Alcorum* we read [*Vindicans non est reus, Patiens tamen optime facit.*]

4 I may suffer a thiefe to kill me.

g *Sayr Thesau. Cas. Conf. l. 7. cap. 9. nu. 17.*

h *Alcor. Azoar. 52.*

And our law, which if a man kill another in his own necessary defence, punishes him with losse of goods, and delivers him from death, not by acquitall, but by way of pardon, seemes to me, to pronounce plainly, that it is not lawfull to defend my life by killing another; which is farther, then any of the others went. And when I compare our two lawes, That if I defend my selfe I am punished, and the other before mentioned,

5 Of *se defendendo* in our law.

mentioned, That if I kill my ſelfe I am puniſhed in the ſame manner, and meaſure; they ſeeme to me, to be ſomewhat perplexed and captious.

6 I am not bound to eſcape from priſon if I can, nor to eate rather then ſtarve.

i *Eman. Sa. Aphor. Confeſ. ver. Charitas.*

And as I may depart from my naturall priviledge of defending my ſelfe, ſo I may obtain from any extrinſique or acceſſory helpe, which is caſually, or by providence (if God reveale not his will therein) preſented unto me. (i [*for a man condemned to death, is not bound in conſcience to redeeme his life with money, though by the law of the place he might doe it.* And though (k) Saint *Thomas* ſay, [*That he which is condemned to dy, kills himſelfe, if he apprehend not, an opportunity to eſcape by flight when it is preſented, and likewiſe if he refuſe meate, when he is condemned to be famiſhed,*] yet the (l) whole ſtreame is againſt him, *Sotus*, *Navar*, *Cajetan*, and *Sayr*. And *Navar* adds, that in theſe dayes (and yet now it is not ſo likely to be *Symbolum Idolotricæ pravitatis*) a man is bound rather to famiſh, then to eat meat offred to Idols.

k *Aquin. 2 2. q. 69. ar. 4. ad 2.*

l *Sayr Theſau. Caſ. Conſ. l. 7. cap. 9.*

And therefore they ſay, that *Aquinas* his opinion, That a man is bound to uſe his priviledge for ſafegard of his life, is onely true then, when he doth not wayve it, for ſome end berter and worthier then our naturall life; of which ſort all ſpirituall advantages are. So that in ſuch caſes they all agree, we may abandon and forſake our ſelves.

7 For ends better then this life, we may neglect this.

And we may ſtep farther yet in this Deſertion; for we may offer our ſelves for the good of our neighbour. For the temporall life cannot

8 I may give my life for another.

be

be more precious then our ſoule; which, in rigour is murdered by every ſinne conſented unto. Yet (m) *Chriſoſtome* ſayes, [*No praiſe is enoughto give* Sara *for conſenting to ly, and to ſubmit herſelfe to Adultery, for ſalvation of her husbands life*] I know (n) Saint *Auguſtine* is earneſt againſt this.

But his earneſtneſſe is upon the matter of fact, for he denyes that either *Abraham* or *Sara* conſented to any ſinne; But when he (o) diſputes *De jure*, whether *Sara* by *Abrahams* conſent might expoſe her ſelfe, to ſave his life, and is much troubled with the example of one which was priſoner, for debt to the State, under *Acindinus* a Præfect, under *Conſtantius*, whoſe wife being ſolicited by a rich man, who would give ſo much as would diſcharge her husband, to poſſeſſe her own night, by her husbands conſent, earned his liberty in that manner; at laſt he leaves it indifferent for any man to think it lawfull or unlawfull in ſuch a neceſſity, though indeede his own opinion decline from it. (p) *Bonaventure* denies, that for the temporall good of another, I may offer willinlgy my life. But he grounds it upon the ſame reaſon that (q) *Auguſtine* doth; That we may not love another more then our ſelves, which in this caſe we ſeeme to doe.

But many of the Fathers, *Hierome*, *Ambroſe*, and *Lactantius*, and many of the Schoole, as *Aquinas Fra. Victoria*, *Soius*, *Bannes*, and infinite are againſt

m *Chriſ. Hom.* 32. *in Genes.*

n *Aug. l.* 22. *adver. fauſtum. cap.* 33.

9 *Chriſoſtomes* opinion of *Sarahs* ly, and Adultery. And St. *Aug.* of that wife who proſtituted her ſelfe to pay her husbands debt.

o *Ca.* 27. *& primo: De ſcrm. Dom. in monte.*

p *Bonavent.* 3. *Diſt.* 29. *q.* 3.

q *Aug. de mendacio. c.* 6.

10 That to give my life for another is not to prefer another, as *Bonaventure*, and *Aug.* ſay, but to prefer vertue before life.

againſt him: and anſwer Saint *Auguſtine* thus, That in that caſe, a man doth not prefer his friend before himſelfe, but he prefers an Act of vertue, and of friendſhip, as things of more ſpirituall Nature, before his own temporall life.

But that for the ſpirituall good of another, a man ſhould expoſe his own life, is an unreſiſted doctrine, and as (r) *Sayr* ſaies, [*It is* ſub præcepto,] So (ſ) a Curate is bound to baptize, and to anoint in the plague time. Yea, it is an act of Vertue, though not of neceſſity, (as in the Curates caſe) (t) [*To viſit a ſick man, in ſuch a time, though you bee a private man, and your end be not ſpirituall comfort.*

And we may yet proceed farther, for wee may lawfully diſpoſſeſſe our ſelves of that, which was before afforded us, and without which we can have no hope to ſuſtaine our lives. (u) As in a perſecution, a private man, having food left ſufficient only to ſuſtaine one man, may give it to a publike perſon, and ſo periſh. And only *Sotus* denyes, that in a ſhipwrack, if after wee have both beene in equall danger, I catch and poſſeſſe my ſelfe of any thing to ſuſtaine me, I may give this to my Father, or to a Magiſtrate: againſt the ſtrength of *Navar*, *Tolet*, *Fra. Victor.* and many others.

The fartheſt, and uttermoſt degree of this Deſertion, is inordinate and indiſcreete voluntary faſting, of which Saint *Hierome*, (as it is (x) related

11 For ſpirituall good is without queſtion.

r *Sayr Theſau. Caſ. Conſ. l. 7. c. 9. nu. 17.*

ſ *Eman Sa. Aphor. Con. verbo Charit.*

t *Idem verbo Ho.*

12 I may give another that without which I cannot live.

u *Aquin. 22. q. 32. ar. 6.*

Sotus.

13 I may over-faſt my ſelfe.

(x) related into the Canons) sayes, [*That by such an immoderate innocence, and indiscreete singing of Psalmes, and Offices, a man looseth his dignity, and incurres the note of madnesse,*] And upon this place (y) *Navar* sayes, That Saint *Hierome* pronounceth, an [*Indiscreete fasting which shortens the life, if the party perceive that it worke that effect, though it be without intention to shorten his life, and that he doe it, to be the better able to satisfie God, yet it is a Selfe-Homicide.*] And (z) hee adds in another place, speaking of the same purpose, [*It makes no difference whether thou be long in killing thy selfe, or doe it at once*]

And (a) so *Cassianus* sayes expresly, [*That that Friar killed himselfe, which having vowed in his journey, to eat nothing except God gave him meat immediately, refused to eat, when theeves accustomed to kill passengers by that place, came and presented him bread.*] And yet, though he saies he killed himselfe, he imputes nothing to him but Indiscretion. And therefore saith (b) one, [*Our Saviour Christ exceeded not 40. dayes in his fast, Ne sui Homicida videretur.*] And he interprets that word, (d *Esuriit*, [*That then he perceived his body to languish and suffer detriment by fasting*] For, if he had not hungred till then, his fasting had had no vertue. So that he gave over, when he found the state of his body impaired by fasting, yet pursuing and imitating the superstition of the Philosophers, who taught that (e) [*Dum corpus augemus, mortaliores efficimur,*] And that (e) [*Per tenuitatem*

x *De Consecr. Dist. 5. Non Mediocriter*

y *Navar ex Dist. 5. de cons.* This in Saint Hieroms opinion is Selfhomicide.

z *Soto de tegsecret mem. 1. q. 3. ex Hieron*

a *Cas. Collatione 2. c. 6.*

15 Of the Friar whom *Cassianus* calls a *Selfe-Homicide* for refusing bread from a theefe, upon a vow. Of Christs fast.

b *Bosquier Cove. 17.*

c *Idem Cove. 18.*

16 Of Philosophers inordinate fasts.

d *Porphir. de Abstin. Anti.*

e *Idem de occasionibus.*

tem assimilamur Deo,] How much the writers in the Romane Church suffer, and obliquely adhort these inordinate Fasts, and other disciplines, appears by that which I cited out of *Clarus Bonarscius* before, and whersoever they have occasion to speake thereof.

Supra.

17 Of the devills threatning S. *Francis* for fasting.

And in no one thing more, then that they inculcate so often, [*That it was the practise of the Devill, to appeare to Saint* Francis, *and cry out to him, that no man which kills himselfe with such maceration, could be saved,*] which (f) *Bonaventure* relates in his life.

f *Cap. de Austeritate.*

8 Examples of long fasts.

Whatsoever hath beene done by others, they teach, we ought to exceede. And since (g) [*The Monkes in Prester* John *his Dominions, fast strictly fifty dayes, and stand all that time to the chinne in water.*] Since they finde in (h) *Abbas Vrsperg*, a maid that fasted two year and a halfe after she had received the body of our blessed Saviour.

g *Middendor. de Academiis fol.* 298.

h *Lilius Gyr. Dialog.* 17.

19 Reasons, effects, and obligations, to rigorous fasts.

And an *Eremit* 22. yeares, without receiving any thing, they say no fast can be too severe, which is undertaken to reduce our body to a tamenesse. Yea, (i) [*though that be already perfectly effected, yet a man is bound to the fasts injoyned.*] For (k) [*Fasting, without charity, doth wash away sinne.*] By this rigor of fasting, they seeme sure, that our Saviour watched all those 40 dayes: because (l) [*Qui dormit, prandet.*] And as it is not likely that *Moses* slept in his 40 dayes conversation with God, so is it unlikely that Christ did lesse then he. And so Saint *Francis* is extoll'd by

i *Sayr Thesaur. Cas. Conf. l.* 3. *cap.* . *n.* 13.

k *Azor. Mor. Inst. pa.* 1. *l.* 7. *cap.* 3 .

l *Bosqui. Couet.* 17.

by them, for obſerving three Lents every year, which (m) Saint *Hierome* ſo much deteſts in the *Montaniſts*. And though their ends were divers, yet this ſhewes, that to ſome ends, theſe enormous witherings of our bodies are allowable. Upon which reaſon (n) *John Baptiſts* auſterity is ſo much dignified; And (o) Saint *Peters* feeding upon Lupins; And (p) Saint *Matthewes* living without fleſh. And not onely the Emperour *Iuſtinians* choiſe, (q) [*Who in an extreme ſickeneſſe in Lent, would take nothing but herbs, and ſalt, and water,*] but alſo the (r) *Carthuſian* Rule, by which though it appeare that fleſh would ſave the Patients life, hee may not eate it. And by the (ſ) Apoſtolicall conſtitutions, (which *Turrianus* extols ſo much, that by them he confutes much of the Reformed Churches doctrine) [*A man muſt faſt to death, rather then receive any meat, from an Excommunicate perſon.*] And in another Chapter, (t) [*If any thing be in a caſe of extreame neceſſity accepted from ſuch a perſon, it may bee beſtowed in full, that ſo their Almes may be burnt, and conſumed to aſhes, but not in meate to nouriſh our ſelves withall.*]

So, to determine this Section of *Deſertion*, ſince we may wayve our defence which Law gives, by putting our ſelves upon a Jurie; and which Nature gives, to repell force with force, ſince I may without flying, or eating when I have meanes, attend an Executioner, or Famine, ſince I may offer my life, even for anothers tempo-

20 Corollary of this Section of Deſertion.

m *Hier. Epiſt. ad Marcell.*

n *Mat. 3. 4.*

o *Greg. Naz. Oratio, de Cura pauperum.*

p *Clem. Alex. l. 2. Pædag. c 1.*

q *Procop. Gaz. l. 1. de ædificiis Iuſtiniani.*

r *Sayr. Theſau. Caſ. Conſ. l. 7. c. 9. N. 30.*

ſ *Clem. Apoſtol. Conſtit. l. 4. cap. 7.*

t *Ibid. cap. 9.*

rall good, ſince I muſt doe it for his Spirituall, ſince I may give another my board in a Shipwracke, and ſo drowne, ſince I may haſten my arrivall to heaven, by conſuming penances, it is a wayward and unnoble ſtubborneſſe in argument, to ſay ſtill, I muſt not kill my ſelfe, but I may let my ſelfe dye; ſince of Affirmations and Denyals, of Omiſſions and Committings, of Enjoying and Prohibitory Commands, ever the one implies and enwraps the other. And if the matter ſhall bee reſolved and governed only by an outward act, and ever by that; if I forbeare to ſwimme in a river and ſo periſh, becauſe there is no act, I ſhall not be guilty, and I ſhall bee guilty if I diſcharge a Piſtoll upon my ſelfe, which I knew not to be charged, nor intended harme, becauſe there is an act.

Of which latter opinion (u) *Mariana* the Jeſuite ſeemes to be, as we ſhall have occaſion to note, in the next Member and *ſpecies of Homicide*, which is, *Aſſiſtance*.

u *Mariana de Rege, l.1. cap. 7.*

SECT. VI.

1 Of another degree of *Homicide*, by Mutilation, which is not in *Tolets* Diviſion.

But before we come to that, we muſt, though it be not, nor naturally could be delivered in *Tolets* Diviſion; conſider another ſpecies of *Homicide*, which is *Mutilation* or *Maymng*.

For, though in Civill Courts, it be not ſubject to like penaltie, yet if it bee accompanied with the ſame Malignitie, it is in conſcience the

the same sinne, especially towards our selves; because it violates the same reason, which is, that none may usurpe upon the bodie over which he hath no Dominion.

Upon which reason, it is also unlawfull for us to deliver our selves into bondage; (which I mention here, because it ariseth from the same ground, and I am loath to afford it a particular Section. Yet (a) holy *Paulinus*, a Confessor, and Bishop of *Nola*, then whom I find no man celebrated with more fame of sanctitie and integrity, to redeeme a Widowes Sonne, delivered himselfe as a a slave to the *Vandals*, and was exported from *Italy* to *Afrique*; and this, as I thinke, when hee was necessary to that place, being then there Bishop; for that was but five yeares before his death.

2 Of delivering ones selfe into bondage.

a *Baron. Martirol*, Junii 2.

But to returne to Mutilation, (b) it is cleare by the Canons, that towards irregularity, it works as much, and amounts as farre, to have maymed, as to have killed.

b *Tabula Paris. irregularit.*

And (c) in a Councell at *London*, *Anno* 1075 one Canon forbids a Clergy man, to bee present at judgement of death, or of Mutilation. And amongst the (d) Apostles Canons this is one, [*He that gelds himselfe cannot be a Clerke, because he is an Homicide of himselfe, and an enemy to Gods creature.* [(e) *And to geld, is to maime in our Law.*]

3 By divers Canons it is all one fault.

c *Binius To.2. pa. 2. fo. 1280.*

d *Can. Apost. Can. 21.*

e *Stanf. Plees del Coron.*

So in the next Canon it is said, [(f) *A Clerk which gelds himselfe must be deposed*, Quia homi-

f *Canon. 23.*

cida sui.] (g) *And a Lay-man must for that fault be excommunicated three yeares*, quia vitæ suæ posuit insidias.] It was therefore esteemed equivalent to killing.

g *Canon.* 23.

And (h) *Calvine*, esteemed it so hainous, that he builds his Argument against Divorce upon this ground, [*God made them one Body, and it is in no case lawfull, for a man to teare his owne body.*] But if this be so lawfull as Divorces are lawfull, certainly this peremptorie sentence against it, must admit some modification.

h *Calv. in Mat.* 19. 4. *Marlorate.*

4 Of *Calvins* argument against divorce, upon the ground of Mutilation.

Without doubt, besides the examples of holy men who have done it, to dislable themselves from taking the burden of Priesthood, of which (i) Saint *Marke* the Evangelist was one, who to that end cut off his thombe. And besides, that as our Saviour said, (k) [*Many should geld themselves for the Kingdome of heaven.*] So (l) *Athenagoras*, 50 yeares after Christ, saies, [*that many did practise it.*] It is doubted by none, [*But* (m) *that a man unjustly detained to a certaine execution, may cut off that limbe by which he is tyed, if he have no other way to escape: or being encompassed with doggs, he may cut off a hand, and cast it to them, to entertaine them while he escape.*

5 The example of Saint *Mark* to escape Priesthood.

i *Hier. Prolog. in Marcum.*

k *Mat.* 19. 12.

l *Orat. vero Anto. & commodo Philosophiæ.*

m *Sayr Thes. Cas. Cons. l.* 7. *cap.* 9.

6 In what cases it is cleare that a man may mayme himselfe.

SECT. VII.

The last species of *Homicide*, on this side; the last act, is an actuall helping and concurrence to it. And every step and degree conducing purposely

1 Of *Tolets* fourth way, by actual helping

posely to that end, is as justly by Judges of Consciences, called *Homicide*, as (a) *Ardoinus* recknoning up all poysons, which have a naturall malignity and affection to destroy mans body, forbeares not a Flea, though it never kill, because it endeavours it, and doth all the hurt it can; and he is diligent in assigning preservatives and restoratives against it.

a *Ardoinus de venenis l.8.c.20* *Ardoinus* reekons a Flea amongst poysons because it would kill.

And (b) so to that *Amalekite*, which told *David* he helped *Saul* to dy, when hee found him too weake to pierce himselfe, *David* pronounced judgement of death, for (saith hee) thine owne mouth hath confessed, *That thou hast kill'd the Lords Anointed.*

b 2 *Sam.*1.16. 2 *David* condemned the *Amalekite*, who said, he helped *Saul* to dye.

Certainely, (c) *Mariana* the Jesuite, whom I named before) esteemes this actuall concurrence to ones death, as heavy as the act it selfe; yea, as it seemes, though the party bee ignorant thereof. For, after hee concluded how an Hereticall King may be poisoned, he is diligent in this prescription, [*That the King bee not constrained to take the poyson himselfe, but that some other may administer it to him: And that therefore it be prepared, and conveied in some other way then meate or drinke, because else, saith he, either willingly or ignorantly he shall kill himselfe.*] So that hee provides, that that King who must dye under the sinnes of Tyranny and Heresie, must yet be defended from concurring to his owne death, though ignorantly, as though this were a greater sinne.

c *Mariana de Rege.l.1.c.7.* 3 *Marianaes* opinion, that a King drinking poyson, prepared and ministred by another, he being ignorant, is a *Selfe-homicide.*

Since

Since therefore this haſtning of our death by ſuch an act, is the ſame, as the intire *Selfe-homicide*, let us conſider how farre irreproved Cuſtome, and example, and Law doth either allow or command it.

For that it is allowable, it ſeemes to me ſome proofe, [(d) *That before any man accuſes him, a Malefactor may go and declare his fault to the Iudge.*]

Though amongſt *Italian* relations, (e) that in *Sanſovine* concerning *England* have many marks and impreſſions of malice, yet of that cuſtome, which hee falſely ſayes to bee obſerved here, [*That men condemned to be hanged are ever accompanied to their Executions by all their kinred, who then hang at their feet, to haſten their ende; And that when a Patient is abandoned by the Phyſicians, his neereſt kinſman ſtrangles him with a pillow.*] Of this, I ſay, that Author had thus much ground, that ordinarily at Executions, men, out of a Charitie, as they thinke, doe ſo; and women which are deſperate of ſicke perſons recovery, uſe to take the pillow from under them, and ſo give them leave to dye ſooner. Have they any more the Dominion over theſe bodies, then the perſon himſelfe? Or if a man were able to doe theſe Offices to himſelfe, might he not doe it? Or might he not with a ſafe conſcience put ſo much waights in his pockets, as ſhould countervaile their ſtretchings? I ſpeake but comparatively; might not he doe it as well as they?

For

d *Sotus de teg. Secret. Memb.* 1. *q.* 7. 4 A Malefactor unaccuſed, may accuſe himſelfe.

e *Sanſovin. de Gover.* 5 Of *Sanſovinus* relation of our cuſtomes at Executions, and withdrawing the pillow in deſperate caſes.

For to my understanding such an act, either in Executioner or by-stander, is no way justifiable; for it is both an injury to the party, whom a sudden pardon might redeeme; and to the Justice, who hath appointed a painfull death to deterre others. (f) The breaking of legs in Crucified men, which was done to hasten death, was not allowed but upon Petition. And the Law might be much defrauded, if such violence might be used, where the breaking of the halter delivered the Prisoner from death; as in some places it doth; and (g) good opinions concurre, that it is to doe ever without doubt, whatsoever is for ease, or escaping painfull passage out of this life; in such cases, a man may more allowably doe by his owne act, then a stranger may. For Law of Nature enclines and excuses him, but they are by many Lawes forbidden to hasten his death; for they are no otherwayes interessed in it, then as parts of the whole body of the State, and so it concernes them, that Justice be executed. Yet we see, this, and the other of withdrawing the pillowes, is ordinarily done, and esteemed a pious office. The *Athenian* Executions were ever by the hand of the offendor, in judgements of poyson.

And in (h) that law of Purgation assigned by God, to ease a man on whom the spirit of Jealousie was come, the Woman was to take the water of curses and bitternesse, which should make her infamous, and her belly swell, and her

6 Of breaking leggs of men at executions: And of breakinge the halter.

f *Iohn* 19.

g *Lucas de penna l.* 1. *c. de defer. et occult. Iohan. de Ant. Soliloq.* 5. *Optine. in D: leg. Imperium.*

h *Num*: 5.

7 Of the purgations assigned by *Moses* in cases of jealousie.

her thighs to rot. And those formes of Purgation, which were called *Vulgares*, lasted long, even in the Church; For there is nothing extant against them, till (i) *Stephen* the fift, *Anno* 885.

And not onely (k) *Charles* the great, in whom the Church acknowledged Piety enough, induced one forme severer then the rest, which was to walke upon 9 burning Harrows. But (l) *Britius* a Bishop, being but callumniated by the people extrajudicially, to have got his Laundresse with child, after his innocence had prevailed so farre with God, that the childe of 30 daies age, being adjured in the name of Christ, had acquitted him, did not admit, but chose and extort a forme of Purgation, to carry burning coales upon his head. With us, (m) both the species of *Ordalium* lasted evidently till King *Johns* time.

And though into that of boyling water men were forced to goe, yet that was but for the meaner sort; but to carry the three pound weight of red hot Iron, which was for the Purgation of the persons of better qualitie, was an act, as all the former were, in which a man must of necessitie doe some thing actually himselfe, and bee the Executioner of his owne Judgement; which as long as these formes of Purgation, and the other by Battell, were lawfull, was lawfull also to be done.

And in S. *Dorotheus*, who euery where professes

Of formes of purgation called *Vulgares*. i 2. q. 5. consuluisti.

k *Tholos. Syn.* l: 48: c: 15. n: 7.

l *Greg. Turo. Hist. Fraucor.* l: . : c: : 9 *Charlemaine* brought in a new purgation. And *Britius* a B. another being acquitted before

m *Lamb. de legibus priscis Anglorum.*

10 With us bothkindes of *Ordalium*, by water, and fire lasted till K. *Iohns* time.

11 In al these, and in battaile the party himself assisted to his payne.

feſſes a love to that obedience, which himſelfe calles indiſcreet, you ſhall reade many prayſes given to men, who did not onely forſake themſelves, but actually further their deſtruction; though not effectually; which makes no difference, if it be in dangers, which uſually men eſcape not. (n) He prayſeth one Fryar, who being by his Abbat commanded to returne that night, the waters being riſen, committed himſelfe to a raging torrent, in ſuch an obedience.

12 Three examples of actuall helpers to their owne deſtruction in *S. Doroth.*

n *B: Doroth. doctrinâ* 1. *de Renunciatione.*

And another, who being bid by his Abbat, to goe into the Towne, where he doubted hee ſhould fall into ſome tentation, by ſome ſpectacle, went but with this proteſtation, *That he hoped not in the protection of God, but in him, who ſent him.* But the moſt naturall to our preſent purpoſe is this; (o) That a holy old man ſeeing his ſervant miſtake poyſon for honey, and put it into his broth, eate it nevertheleſſe without chiding; and when the ſervant perceived it, and exclaimed, Sir, I have kill'd you, anſwered, it is all one, for if God would have had mee eate honey, he would have directed thy hand to honey.

o *Idem Doct: 7. de accuſ. ſui ipſius.*

Of the holyneſſe of *Joſeph of Arimathæa*, we have teſtimony enough; (p) who being ſent by the Apoſtles to preach the Goſpel, amongſt other perſecutions, was conſtrained to drinke poyſon: in which there muſt of neceſſitie bee ſuch an act, as we diſpute of now.

p *Supplement: Chron. an. Chr.* 3.

13. Of *Joſeph* of *Arimathæa* his drinkinge poyſon.

How much did [(q) *Saint* Andrew *contribute*

q *Navar manca:* 1. *n.* 28.

14. Of Saint *Andrew* and Saint *Lawr.*

to his owne Crucifying? How much Saint Laurence *to his broyling, when he called to the Tyrant, This side is enough, turne the other, and then eate?*] [(r) *Magni quod faciunt, præcipiunt,*] sayes, *Quintillian.* And these acts of men, otherwise esteemed holy, may ever be good warrants and examples to us, when the cause is not prejudged by any greater authoritie, as Scripture, or Councells, nor that very act accused by any Author.

r *Controv.* 3.

15. *Casuists* not clear whether a condemned man may doe the last act to his death.

But to stay no longer upon Examples, amongst *Casuists* I observe the greater number to deny, that it is lawfull for a man condemned, to doe the last and immediate act conducing to death, as the drinking of poyson; But the acts somewhat more removed, they agree he may doe.

And even this act of drinking poyson, (s) *Fra: a Victoria* defends, to be lawfull. So that amongst them it is not clear, but that a man may do it. Yea, in very many cases, it is not onely lawfull to doe as much, without any condemnation, but it is necessary, and by their rules, sinnefull to omit it. For Curates must goe to infected houses, to minister the Sacraments. And (t) if a Priest enter a wood, where three waite to kill him, and one of them repenting that purpose meet him, and by way of Confession *sub Sigillo*, discover the fault, the Priest is bound to goe forward to a certaine death into a wood, rather then by returning to let the others know, that he knew it by confession. So peremptory is their Doctrine, how ever their practise be, against revealing

s *Relect. de Homicid: n:* 30: *in resp. ad* 8.

16. But unto Curates and Priests sometimes it is *sub præcepto*, even without condemnation.

t *Sayr Sum: Sacram. pœnit: cap* 32.

ling Confeſſions. And though perchance this ſeeme a wanton caſe, framed upon impoſſible concurrences, as (u) *Soto* eſteemes of it, yet the reaſon may have uſe; That though ſelfe-preſervation be Divine Naturall Law, and the ſeale of Confeſſion but Divine Poſitive Law, yet becauſe circumſtances are not alike, in this, a publique good ſhall be preferred before his private life. So that we may doe ſome Acts our ſelves, which conduceth probably, yea certainly, as farre as humane knowledge can reach, to our deſtruction: which is the neereſt ſtep to the laſt act of doing it intirely our ſelves.

u *De teg. Sec. memb.* 3. *q.* 4.

SECT. VIII.

Of which laſt act, as we ſpoke whilſt we conſidered the Law of Nature, and muſt againe when we come to underſtand thoſe places of Scripture, which ſeeme to ayme towards it, ſo before wee conclude this part, of the Law of Reaſon, we may fitly preſent ſuch deductions, compariſons, and conſequences, as may juſtly ſeeme in reaſon, to annihilate or diminiſh this fault. Of which, becauſe moſt will be grounded, either upon the conſcience of the Doer, or upon the Churches opinion of the fact when it is done, wee will onely conſider how farre an erring Conſcience may juſtifie any act, and then produce ſome examples of perſons guilty of this, and yet canonized by the Church, by admiſſion

1. Of *Tolets* laſt *Species* of Homicide which is the act it ſelfe.

2. How farre an erring conſcience may juſtifie.

into the Martyrologe, and assigning them their Feasts, and Offices, and Vigils, and like religious Celebrations. Therefore to make no use of (a) *Pythagorus* example, who rather then hee would offend his Philosophicall conscience, and either tread upon the Beanes himselfe, or suffer his Scholers to speake before their time, delivered up himselfe, and forty of them to his Enemies sword. And to avoide the ambages and multiforme entangling of Schoolemen; herein we will follow that which is delivered for the common opinion; which is, (b) that not onely a conscience which errs justly probably and *Bona fide*, that is, after all Morall industry and diligence hath beene used, (yet I meane not exquisite diligence, but such as is proportionall to the person, and his quality, and to the knowledge which that man is bound to have of that thing, at that time) is bound to doe according to that mis-information, and mis-perswasion so contracted. But also, if it erre negligently, or otherwise viciously, and *mala fide*, as long as that errour remaines and resides in it, a man is bound not to doe against his conscience.

a *Diog. Laert. lib.* 8.

3 *Pythagoras* conscience.

b *Azor. Inst. Mor p.* 1. *l.* 2. *cap.* 8.

In the first case, if one in his conscience thinke that hee ought to lye, to save an innocent, or that he ought to steale to save a famished man, he is a Homicide if he lye not, or steale not.

And in the second case, though he be not bound to any Act, yet it is lawful to him then, to omit any thing necessary otherwise. And this obligation

obligation which our Conſcience caſts upon us, is of ſtronger hold, and of ſtraighter band, then the precept of any Superiour, whether Law, or perſon; and is ſo much *juris naturalis*, as it cannot be infringed nor altered, *beneficio divinæ indulgentiæ*, to uſe their owne words. Which Doctrin, as it is every where to be gathered among the *Caſuiſts*, ſo is it well collected and amaſſed, and and argued, and confirmed, eſpecially by *Azorius*. If then a man after convenient and requiſite diligence, deſpoiled of all humane affections, and ſelf-intereſt, and [*Sancto bonæ impatientiæ igne exardens*,] as *Paulinus* ſpeaks; do in his conſcience beleeve that he is invited by the Spirit of God to doe ſuch an act as *Ionas*, *Abraham*, and perchance *Sampſon* was, who can by theſe rules condemne this to be ſinne? And therefore I doubt there was ſome haſte and præcepitation in (c) *Caſſianus* his judgement, though otherwiſe, a very juſt eſteemer and valuer of works of devotion and obedience; who pronounces that that apparition of an Angell, to *Hero* an Eremit, after 50 yeares ſo intenſe and earneſt attending of Gods ſervice, and religious negligence of himſelfe, that he would ſcarſe intermit Eaſter day, from his ſtrict faſting, and being now (d) *Victoriarum conſcientia plenus*, (as the Panegyrique ſaies) was an illuſion of the Devill to make him deſtroy himſelfe. Yet *Hero* being drawn out of the Well into which he had caſt himſelfe, and living three dayes after, perſiſted in a devout acknowledgement

Epiſt. 3. Sever. lib. 1.

c *Caſſian. Collat. 2. cap. 5.*

4 Of the apparition to *Hero* an Eremit by which he killed himſelfe: out of *Caſſianus*.

d *Nazarius Conſtantio.*

ledgement that it was the Spirit of God, which sollicited him to that, and dyed in so constant an assurance and alacrity, that *Paphnutius* the Abbat, though at first in some suspence, did not number him *inter Biathanatos*, which were persons reputed vitiously to have killed themselves.

Nor may it be necessarily concluded, that this act was therefore evill, if it appeared to be from the Devill. For (e) *Wierus*, tells us of a maid whom the Devill perswaded to goe such a Pilgrimage, and at such an Altar, to hear a Masse, for recovery of her health.

Certainly if as (f) *Vasquez* holds, [*it be not Idolatry to worship the Devill in an Apparition, which I thinke to be God*] it can be no offence to beleeve him, after I have used all meanes to discerne and distinguish: For not onely those Rules which are delivered ordinarily to know him by, are apparantly false, which are a difference in his hands or feet, or some notable deformity by hornes, or a tayle, of which (g) *Binsfeldius* seems confident of the first, and (h) *Menghi* of the second. But that Rule that God alwaies infuseth or commands good things, if it be understood of that which is good, in the common and naturall course is not alwaies safe, for it held not in *Abraham*, nor the Israelites case. Therefore though *Vasquez* his first excuse, That such a worship is not Idolatry, because by reason of our immediate relation to God, we never arrest nor stop upon the Devill by the way, will doe

5 The Devill sometimes sollicites to good.

e *Wier. l.* 5. *c.* 1.

f *Vasq. de adorat. l.* 3 *disp.* 1. *cap.* 5.

6 By *Vasquez* it is not Idolatry to worship God in the Divell.

7 Rules to distinguish the spirits by marks are false.

g *Binsfeld. de confes. sagarum, f.* 67.

Menghi fustis Dæmonum, cap. 8.

8 So is the Rule, That good Angels alwaies move to good ordinarily.

doe no good in our caſe of beleeving, yet his other will, which he hath in the ſame place, That there may be an invincible ignorance, and that in that any exterior act whatſoever, proceeding from a ſincere and pure intention of the mind, is an act of true Religion. For ſafelier then the (i) Panegyrick could ſay to *Conſtantine*, [*Suacuique Prudentia Deus eſt*] may we ſay of every mans conſcience thus rectified. If therefore they will ſtill turn in their circle, and ſay, God concurs to no evill, we ſay nothing is ſo evill, but that it becomes good, if God command it; and that this is not ſo naturally evill, that it requires a ſpeciall commiſſion from God; but as it becomes good, if he commands it, ſo it becomes indifferent, if he remove the reaſons with which the precept againſt it was conditioned. If they returne to S. *Auguſtins* two reaſons againſt *Donatus*, whereof the firſt was, [*we have authority to ſave thy body againſt thy will,*] And the ſecond, [*None of the faithfull ever did this act*] we are thereby haſtned to the other conſideration, how they which have done it, have been eſteemed of by the Catholique Church.

But to ſpeake a little in paſſing of Saint *Auguſtines* ſecond reaſon, (for the firſt hath very little force, ſince though it may be lawfull to preſerve a man willing to die, yet it is not alwaies of merit, nor obligatory; And therefore (k) *Ignatius* doth ſo earneſtly dehort the *Romans* from endeavouring to ſuccour him. And (l) *Corona Civica*

9. As in adoration, ſo in this caſe, invincible ignorance may excuſe.

i *Inc. Conſtan*

Supra.

10. Of Saint *Aug.* his firſt reaſon to *Donatus*, that we may ſave one againſt his will.

k *Ignatius ep: ad Romanos.*

l *Ant. Auguſt. Epiſc. Tarrac: de leg. Roman. cap.* 44.

Civica which was given to any which had rescued a Citizen in the warres, was not given though he produced witnesses of the fact, except the person so rescued confessed that he received a benefit thereby;) why doth *S. Augustine* referre *Donatus* in that second reason, to examples. For if *Donatus* had produced any (as out of credible and authentique History he might very many, and out of Scriptures Canonick in (m) S^t. *Augustines* opinion, he might have alledged the example *Eleazar*, and of *Rasis*,) Saint *Augustine* was ever provided for this retrait, That it was a speciall inspiration, and not to be drawn into consequence or imitation.

Had it been a good Argument in *Rome* for 500. yeeres, that Divorce was not lawfull, because (n) no example was of it? Or almost for 2000. That a woman might not sue it against her Husband, because (o) till *Herods* daughter there was no example of it? But now when the Church hath thus long persevered, in not only justifying but solemnizing many examples hereof, are not Saint *Augustines* Disciples guilty of the same pertinacy which is imputed to *Aristotles* followers, (p) who defending the Heavens to be inalterable, because in so many ages nothing had been observed to have been altered, his Schollers stubbornly maintain his Proposition still, though by many experiences of new Stars, the reason which moved *Aristotle* seems now to be utterly defeated?

Thus

11. Of his second of examples: and of his escape if *Donatus* had produced examples.

m *De civitate Dei l.* 18. *cap.* 38. *et lib.* 2. *cont. Gaudent. cap.* 23.

12 Divorce in Rome, and in Jurie long without example.

n *A: Gellius l*: 4. *cap.* 3.

o *Serarius de Rabbin. et Herodibus cap.* 17.

13. S. *Aug.* schollers in this point of examples, as stubborne as *Aristotles*, for the heavens inalterablnes, though the reason of both be ceased.

p *Kepplerus de Stella Serpent. cap.* 23.

Thus much being ſpoken by the way of Saint *Auguſtine*, and having purpoſely ſepos'd the examples recorded in the Scriptures for our third part, we will conſider ſome Examples regiſtred in the Eccleſiaſtick Hiſtory.

The Church whoſe dignity and conſtancy it becomes well, that that Rule of her owne Law, be ever juſtly ſaid of her ſelf, (q) [*Quod ſemel placuit amplius diſplicere non poteſt*] where new reaſons do not interpoſe, (r) celebrates upon the 9. of *February* the Birth, that is the death, of the Virgin and Martyr *Appollonia*; who, after the perſecutors had beat out her teeth, and vexed her with many other tortures, when ſhe was preſented to the fire, being inflamed with a more burning fire of the Holy Ghoſt, broke from the Officers hands, and leapt into the fire.

For this act of hers many Advocates riſe up for her, and ſay, that either the Hiſtory is not certain, (yet the Authors are *Beda*, *Uſuardus*, *Ado*, and (as *Barronius* ſayes *Latinorum cæteri*) Or elſe, (ſ) ſays *Sayr*, you muſt anſwer that ſhe was brought very neer the fire, and as good as thrown in: Or elſe that ſhe was provok'd to it by divine inſpiration. But, but that another divine inſpiration, which is true Charity, moved the beholders then to beleeve, and the Church ever ſince to acknowledge, that ſhe did therein a Noble and Chriſtian act, to the ſpeciall glory of God, this act of hers, as well as any other, might have been calumniated to have been done, out of wea-

q *Sextus Reg. Iur: quod ſemel.*

r *Baron. Martyrolog.*

14. Of the Martyr *Apollonia.*

15 Of anſwers in her excuſe.

ſ *Sayr. Theſaur. Caſ. Couſ. l. 9. c. 7. num. 11.*

rineſſe of life, or fear of relapſe, or haſt to Heaven, or ambition of Martyrdome.

The memory of (t) *Pelagia*, as of a virgin and Martyr, is celebrated the ninth of *June*. And though the Hiſtory of this woman ſuffer ſome perplexity, and giue occaſion of doubting the truth thereof, (for *Ambroſe* ſays, That ſhe and her Mother drownd themſelves; and *Chryſoſtome* that they flung themſelves downe from a houſe top. And *Baronius* ſaw this knot to be ſo hard to unentangle, that he ſays, [*Quid ad hac dicamus, non habemus*]) yet the Church, as I ſaid, celebrates the Act, as though it were glad to take any occaſion, of approving ſuch a courage in ſuch a cauſe, which was but preſervation of Chaſtity. [(u) *Their Martyrdome ſaith Saint* Auguſtine *was ever in the Catholique Church frequented* Veneratione Celeberrima.]

And (x) Saint *Ambroſe*, when his ſiſter *Marcellina*, conſulted him directly upon the point, what might be thought of them who kill themſelves in ſuch caſes, (and then it is agreed by all that the opinions of the Fathers are eſpecially to be valued, when they ſpeake of a matter, not incidently or caſually, but directly and deliberately) anſwers thus, [*We have an example of ſuch a Martyrdome in* Pelagia] And then he preſents her in this religious meditation, [*Let us die, if we may have leave, or if we be denied leave, yet let us die. God cannot be offended with this, when we uſe it but for a remedy*;] and our faith takes away all offence.

Here

t *Baron. Mart.* 16. Of the Martyr *Pelagia.*

17. Though her Hiſtory be very uncertain the Church ſeems glad of occaſion to celebrate ſo noble a fact.

18. *Auguſtins* teſtimonie of her.

u *Auguſt. de Civitate Dei l.* 1. *cap.* 26.

x *De Virg. l.* 3. 19 *Ambroſe* meditation upon her.

Here is no difficulty: for who is willing to dye, & cannot, since there are so many waies to death? I will not trust my hand least it strike not home: nor my breast, least it withdraw it selfe: I will leave no escape to my flesh, for we can dye with our own weapons, and without the benefit of an Executioner.

And then having drest her selfe as a Bride, and going to the water, Here, sayes she, let us be baptized; this is the Baptisme where sinnes are forgiven, and where a kingdome is purchased: and this is the baptisme after which none sinnes. This water regenerates; this makes us virgines, this opens heaven, defends the feeble, delivers from death, and makes us Martyrs. Onely we pray to God, that this water scatter us not, but reserve us to one funerall. Then entred they as in a dance, hand in hand, where the torrent was deepest, and most violent. And thus dyed, (as their mother upon the bank called them) [*These Prelates of virginitie, Captaines of Chastitie, and companions in Martyrdome.*]

And before *Ambrose*, we finde (y) *Eusebius* to have been of the same perswasion, who thus produces the Mother encouraging them; [*You know how I have brought you up, in the feare of God; and shall your nakednesse, which the publike ayre hath not had leave to see now be prostituted in the Stewes? Have not so little faith in God, as to feare death, Despise not Chastity so much, as to live with shame; but with a pure and chaste death condemne this world.*

29. *Eusebius* his Oration imagind in the person of her mother.

y *Eusebius Eccles. Histor: l. 8. cap. 4.*

And ſo, deluding their Keepers, as though they withdrew for naturall neceſsities, they drowned themſelves.] All Authors of that time are ſo profuſe in the praiſe of this fact, that it is juſt to ſay thereof, as (z) *Pliny* ſayes of *Nervaes* adopting *Trajane*, [*It was impoſsible it ſhould have pleaſed all when it was done, except it had pleaſed all before it was done.*]

z *Plin. paneg. Trajan.*

For no Author, that I have lighted upon, diminiſhed the glory of theſe and ſuch other, untill Saint *Auguſtine* out of his moſt zealous and ſtartling tenderneſſe of conſcience, began to ſeeke out ſome waies, how theſe *Selfe-homicides* might be juſtified, becauſe he doubted that this act naturally was not exempt from taxation. And yet ever hee brings himſelfe to ſuch perplexitie, as either he muſt defend it, and call in queſtion, the authority of a generall conſonance of all times and Authors, or retire to that poore and improbable defence, that it was done by Divine inſtinct. Which can very hardly be admitted in this caſe, where not their Religion but onely their Chaſtitie was ſolicited and attempted.

21. S. *Auguſt.* firſt of any doubted their fact, and did ſeeke ſhifts to defend it which it needed not.

Nor can Saint *Ambroſe*, or *Euſebius* be drawn to that opinion of eſpeciall Divine inſtinct, becauſe ſpeaking *ex animo*, though in the mothers perſon, they incite them to it with reaſons from Morrall vertues.

22. S. *Auguſt.* example hath drawne *Pedraca* to the ſame ſhift, of ſpecial divine inſtinct in a like caſe.

Yet Saint *Auguſtines* example, (as it prevailes very much, and very juſtly for the moſt part) hath

hath drawne many others since to the like interpretation of the like acts. For when the kingdome of *Naples* came to bee devided betweene *Ferdinand* the fifth, and *Lewis* the twelfth, the French Army being admitted into *Capua*, upon condition to do no violence, amongst many outrages, a virgin not able to escap the fury of a licentious Souldier, offered for ransome to lead him to treasure: and so tooke advantage of a place in the wall, to fling her selfe into the River. [*Which act,* (a) *sayes* Pedraça, *we must beleeve to be done by Divine inspiration, because God loves chastity now as well as ever he did.*] Which escape every side may finde easie, if being pressed with reason they may say, as *Peter Martyr* doth of the *Egyptian* Midwives, and of *Rahab*, and such, (b) [*If they did lye, they did it,* impulsu Dei.]

But as our custome hitherto hath been, let us depart from Examples to Rules; though concurrence of Examples, and either an expresse or interpretative approbation of them, much more such a dignifying of them, as this, of the whole Church, and of Catholike Authors approved by that Church, bee equivalent to a Rule. And to ease the Reader, and to continue my first resolution of not descending into many particulars, I will onely present one Rule, but so pregnant, that from it many may be derived; by which, not onely a man may, but must doe the whole and intire action of killing himselfe; which is, to preserve the seale of Confession. For

a *Pedraca Cas. de consc. 5. præc. Hispanica Editio.*

23. So says *P. Martyr* of the Midwiues and of *Rahabs lye.*

b In Jud 3.

For though (c) the Rule in generall bee, [That if a Spider fall into the Chalice, the Wine may be changed, becauſe, *Nihil abominabile debet ſumi occaſione hujus Sacramenti.*] And ſo (d) it may, if the Prieſt after Conſecration come to the knowledge that the Wine is poyſoned, [*Ne calix vitæ vertatur in mortem*;] Yet (e) if hee know this by Confeſſion, from his aſſiſtant, or any other, and cannot by any diverſion, nor diſguiſe, eſcape the diſcovering, that this was confeſſed to him, without drinking it, if it bee poyſon, he muſt drinke it.

But becauſe men of more abundant reading, active diſcourſe, and concluſive judgement, will eaſily provide themſelves of more Reaſons and Examples, to this purpoſe; it ſhall ſatisfie me, to have awakened them thus much, and ſhewed them a marke to direct their Meditations upon. And ſo I may proceed to the third Part, which is of the Law of God.

24. To preſerue the ſeale of confeſſion a man may be bound to kill himſelfe.

c *Io: de Lap. Cas. Miſſales c. 6: art. 5.*

d *Ibid.*

e *Sotus de teg. ſecret. memb: 3. q: 4.*

The Third Part.

OF THE LAW OF GOD.

Distinction I.

SECT. I.

THat light which issues from the Moone, doth best represent and expresse that which in our selves we call the light of Nature; for as that in the Moone is permanent and ever there, and yet it is unequall, various, pale, and languishing, So is our light of Nature changeable. For being at the first kindling at full, it wayned presently, and by dedeparting further and further from God, declined by generall sinne, to almost a totall Eclipse: till God comming neerer to us, first by the Law, and then by Grace, enlightned and repayred it againe, conveniently to his ends, for further exercise of his Mercy and Justice. And then those Artificiall Lights, which our selves make for our use and service here, as Fires, Tapers,

1 An induction to the handlinge of these places of scripture.

and ſuch reſemble the light of Reaſon, as wee have in our Second part accepted that Word. For though the light of theſe Fires and Tapers be not ſo naturall, as the Moone, yet becauſe they are more domeſtique, and obedient to us, wee diſtinguiſh particular objects better by them, then by the Moone; So by the Arguments, and Deductions, and Concluſions, which our ſelves beget and produce, as being more ſerviceable and under us, becauſe they are our creatures; particular caſes are made more cleare and evident to us; for theſe we can be bold withall, and put them to any office, and examine, and prove their truth, or likelihood, and make them anſwere as long as wee will aske; whereas the light of Nature, with a ſolemne and ſupercilious Majeſtie, will ſpeake but once, and give no Reaſon, nor endure Examination.

But becauſe of theſe two kindes of light, the firſt is to weake, and the other falſe, (for onely colour is the object of ſight, and we not truſt candlelight to diſcerne Colours) we have therefore the Sunne, which is the Fountraine and Treaſure of all created light, for an Embleme of that third beſt light of our underſtanding, which is the Word of God. (a) *Mandatum lucerna, & Lex lux,*] ſayes *Solomon*. But yet (b) as weake credulous men, thinke ſometimes they ſee two or three Sunnes, when they ſee none but Meteors, or other apparance; ſo are many tranſported with like facilitie or dazeling, that for ſome

a *Prov. 6.*
b *Plin: l. 2: cap 31.*

ſome opinions which they maintaine, they think they have the light and authority of Scripture, when, God knowes, truth, which is the light of Scriptures, is Divine truely under them, and removed in the fartheſt diſtance that can bee. If any ſmall place of Scripture, miſ-appeare to them to bee of uſe for juſtifying any opinion of theirs; then (as the Word of God hath that precious nature of gold, that a little quantity thereof, by reaſon of a faithfull tenacity and ductileneſſe, will be brought to cover 10000. times as much of any other Mettall,) they extend it ſo farre, and labour, and beat it, to ſuch a thinneſſe, as it is ſcarce any longer the Word of God, only to give their other reaſons a little tincture and colour of gold, though they have loſt all the waight and eſtimation

But ſince the Scripture it ſelf teaches, (c) [*That no Prophecie in the Scripture, is of private interpretation,*] the whole Church may not be bound and concluded by the fancie of one, or of a few, who being content to enſlumber themſelves in an opinion, and lazy prejudice, dreame arguments to eſtabliſh, and authorize that.

c 2. *Pet.* 1: 20.

A (d) profeſſed interpreter of Dreames, tells us, [*That no Dreame of a private man may be interpreted to ſignifie a publike buſineſſe.*] This I ſay, becauſe of thoſe places of Scriptures, which are aledged for the Doctrin which we now examine, ſcarce any one, (except the Precept, *Thou ſhalt not kill*) is offered by any two Authors. But to

d *Artemidorus de ſomn. Interp. l*: 1. *cap.* 2.

one, one place, to another, another seemes directly to governe in the point, and to me, (to allow Truth her naturall and comely boldnesse) no place, but that seemes to looke towards it.

2. Why I forbeare to name them who cite these places of Scripture.

And therefore in going over all those sentences, which I have gathered from many Authors, and presenting convenient answers and interpretations thereof, I will forbeare the names of those Authors, who produced them so impertinently, least I should seeme to discover their nakednesse, or insimulat them even of prevarication.

3. If any oppose an answer what I intreat of him.

If any Divine shall thinke the cause, or persons injured herein, and esteeme me so much worth the reducing to the other opinion, as to apply an answer hereunto, with the same Charitie which provoked me, and which, I thanke God hath accompanied me from the beginning, I beseech him, to take thus much advantage from me and my instruction, that he will doe it without bitternesse. He shall see the way the better, and shew it the better, and saile through it the better, if he raise no stormes.

e *Mat.* 1. 17.

4. Why Clergy men may fish, or hunt but not with doggs.

f *Ex Dist.* 86. *Esqu.*

Such men, (e) as they are [*Fishers of men*,] so may they also hunt us into their nets, for our good. But there is perchance, some mystique interpretation belonging to that (f) Canon which allowes Clergy men to hunt; for they may doe it by Nets and Snares, but not by Dogges; for clamour and bitings are forbidden them.

And

And I have been ſorry to ſee, that even *Beza* himſelfe, writing againſt an Adverſary, and a cauſe equally and extreamely obnoxious, onely by allowing too much fuell to his zeale, enraged againſt the man, and neglecting, or but preſcribing in the cauſe, hath with leſſe thoroughneſſe and ſatisfaction, then either became his learning and watchfulneſſe, or anſwered his uſe and cuſtome, given an anſwer to *Ochius* booke of *Polygamy*.

5. Of *Beza's* anſwer to *Ochius* Polygamy.

Diſtinction II.

SECT. I.

IN all the Iudiciall, in all the Ceremoniall Law delivered by *Moſes*, who was the moſt particular in his Lawes of any other, there is no abomination, no mention of this *Selfe-Homicide*. He teacheth what we ſhall, and ſhall not, eate, and weare, and ſpeake, and yet nothing againſt this.

1. No place offered out of Iudiciall nor Ceremoniall law.

SECT. II.

But the firſt place that I find offered againſt it is, in *Geneſis*. [*I will require your bloud wherein your lives are, at the hand of every beaſt will I re-*

Of the place in *Gen.* 9. 5.

quire it ; and at the hand of man, even at the hand of a mans brother will I require the life of man ; who ſo ſheddeth mans bloud, by man ſhall his bloud be ſhed.]

2. We are not bound to accept the interpretations of the Rabbins.

And this place a very learned man of the Reformed Church, ſayes, the *Jewes* underſtand of *Selfe-homicide*. But ſhall wee put our ſelves under the *Iewes* yoake, (a) [*That if we finde in the* Rabbins, *things contrary to Nature, wee muſt dare to accuſe nothing but our owne weakeneſſe, becauſe their word is Gods Word, and if they contradict one another, yet both are from God.*]

a *Buxdorfius Synag. Iudaica ex Rabbi Iſaac cap: 1. fol. 62.*

(b) *Lyra* who ſeldome departs from the *Iewes*, in matters not controverted between them, and us, toucheth upon no ſuch expoſition ; yet hee expounds it more then one way, and with liberty enough, and farre ſtraying.

b *Lyra in hunc locum.*

3. Of *Lyra* and of *Sâ* his Hebraiſmes.

And (c) *Emanuel Sâ*, who in his notes is more curious, and ſuperſtitious, in reſtoring all the Hebraiſmes, and oftentimes their interpretations, then perchance that Church would deſire at his hands, offers at no other ſenſe then the words preſent. Nor can *Selfe-homicide* fall within the commination and puniſhment of that Law ; for how can the Magiſtrate ſhed his bloud, who hath killed himſelfe ?

c *Ema. Sâ Not: in univerſ: Script.*

SECT. III.

Of the place in *Deuter.* 33. 39.

The next is in *Deuteronomie* : [*I kill, and I give life.*] Out of which is concluded, that all authority

thority of life and death is from God, and none in our selves.

But shall we therefore dare to condemne utterly, all those states and governments, where Fathers, Husbands, and Masters, had jurisdiction over Children, wives, and servants lives? If we dare, yet how shall we defend any Magistracy, if this be so strictly accepted? and if it admit exceptions, why may not our case be within those?

4. Iurisdiction of Parents, Husbands, Masters, and Magistrates, must consist with this place.

How soever that this place is incongruously brought, appears by the next words, [*There is not any that can deliver from my hand*] for this being a Verse of that divine poem, which God himselfe made and delivered *Moses*, as a stronger and more slippery insinuation and impression into the *Israelites* hearts, then the language of any Law would make, expresses onely that the mercies and judgements of God, are safe and removed from any humane hinderance, or interruption. So (a) in another gratulatory Song made by *Samuels* mother, the same words are repeated, [*The Lord killeth and maketh alive,*] and this because God had given her a son, when she was past hope. That place also in *Tobit* (b) is fitly paraleld with this, [*He leadeth to hell, and bringeth up, nor is there any that can avoid his hand.*] And can these two places be detorted to their purpose, That none but God may have jurisdiction over our temporall life? Or (c) that place of the book of *Wisdome*, which is also ever joyned, as of the same signification with these, [*for thou hast the power of life, and*

5. This place must be interpreted, as the other places of Scripture which have the same word, from which no conclusion can be wrested against this fact.

a 1. *Sam*: 2. 6.

b *Tob*: 13. 2.

c *Sap*: 16. 13.

and death] which is ſpoken of his miraculous curing by the Brazen Serpent. So that all theſe foure places have one reſpect and ayme, and none of them look towards our queſtion.

SECT. IIII.

1. Of the place of Iob 7. 1.

In the order of the Divine books, the next place is produced out of *Job*, [*Militia eſt vita hominis ſuper terram.*] for, though our tranſlation give it thus, [*Is there not an appointed time to man upon earth?*] yet the Latine Text is thus cited to this purpoſe by ſome not addicted to the Vulgar Edition, becauſe it ſeems in Latine better to afford an argument againſt *Self homicide*. For therupon they infer, that we may not depart at our own pleaſure from the battell. But becauſe onely the Metaphor and not the extending of it, nor inference upon it, is taken out of the Scripture, it brings no ſtrong obligation with it, nor deſerves much earneſtneſſe in the anſwer, yet to follow him a little in his Alluſion, a) [*A Souldier may by Law, be ignorant of the Law, and is not much accuſable if he tranſgreſſe it.*] And by (b) another Law, it [*a Souldier whoſe preſence is neceſſary for the ſafeguard of the Army, may be abſent* cauſa Reipub. *and being abſent, his abſence ſhall be interpreted to be ſo.*] And (c) even to thoſe which killed themſelvs in the Army, we noted before in the ſecond part, That the lawes were not ſevere, if they had any colour of juſt cauſe: So that this figurative argument

2. Why they cite this place in Latine.

a *Digeſt. li: 22. tit: 6. le: 9.*

b *L. 4. tit: 6. leg: 44.*
3. Of ſouldiers priviledges of abſence by law.

c *Supra.*

gument profits then nothing, eſpecially being taken from this place where the ſcope of *Job* was to prove that our felicity and end upon which our actions are bent, is not in this life, but as wars work to peace, ſo we labour here to death, to that happines which we ſhall have after. And therfore whoſoever were author of that letter which hath (d) Chriſts name to *Abgarus*, doth not make Chriſt ſay, that when he hath done that for which he was ſent hither, he will come to him, and take his offer of halfe his Kingdome, but that when he hath done, he will returne to him which ſent him: That is he will die, ſo that if either ſide have advantage by this place of *Job*, we have it.

4. *Iobs* ſcope is, that as war works to peace So here we only labour to Death.

d *Euſeb. l.1. cap.13.*

5. Of Chriſts letter to King *Abgarus.*

SECT. V.

And by the other place of *Job* much more, which is, [*Therefore my ſoule chuſeth rather to bee ſtrangled, and to die, then to be in my bones.*] Hereuupon they infer, That if it might have been lawfull to die ſo, *Job* would have done it. But beſides that the wretched poverty and feebleneſſe of this manner of Negative arguments, *Iob* did it not, therefore he might not do it, we may perceive by the whole frame of the Hiſtory, that God had choſen him for another uſe, and an example of extream patience. So that for any thing that appears in *Iobs* caſe, he might not lawfully doe it, becauſe he could propoſe nothing but

1. Of the place *Iob* 7. 15.

2. Why this was not lawfull to *Job.*

his own eaſe. Yet *Iob* whoſe ſanctity I thinke it ſacrileadge to diminiſh, whether he were a perſon or perſonate, in their confeſſion ſtrayed thus farre towards killing himſelfe, as to wiſh his death, and curſe his birth; for his whole third Chapter is a bitter and malignant invective againſt it, and a violent wiſhing of his own death.

3 His words ſeeme to ſhew ſome ſteps toward a purpoſe of *Selfe-homicide.*

(a) *Sextus Senenſis* gives an anſwer for him ſo lite all, as it can admit or reach to no ſenſe, which is, [*That curſing his birth day which then was paſt, he curſed nothing*]

4. *Sex: Sen:* and *Gregories* expoſition thereof.

a *Sex: Sen: Bibliot. Sanct. lib:* 8. *Hereſ.* 10.

And (b) Saint *Gregory* gives an anſwer ſo myſticall, as no ſenſe can reach to it, which is, [*That there is a ſecond birth into Sinne in this world, and* Job *curſed his entrance into that.*] And ſo becauſe theſe words might bee readily taken for an inordinate wiſhing of death; *Gregory* provides them alſo a myſticall interpretation, for the Latine reading it thus, [*Suſpendium elegit anima mea,*] he ſays, [*This was* Suſpendium ſpirituale, *which was but an elevation of the minde, as S.* Paul *ſaid, Chriſto crucifixus ſum cruci*] But beſides that this eſcape will not ſerve, when the Originall word is conſidered, and that the next verſe is, *Deſperavi, nequicquam ultra vivam*] in the twentieth verſe, he chides God by the name of [*O thou preſerver of men*] as being angry that he preſerved him, [*Being now a burthen to himſelfe, and would not leave him alone, whilſt he might ſwallow his ſpittle.*] And he ends that Chapter thus [*If thou ſeekeſt me in the morning, I ſhall not be found.*] This I

b *Greg. Mor: l:* 4. *cap.* 6.

Gal: 2.

ſay

ſay, onely to ſhow that one whom none hath exceeded in holines, may without any detortion of his words, be argued to have ſtept farre towards a purpoſe of killing himſelfe. Who liſt to give any other conſtruction to his words ſhall not diſpleaſe me, nor impaire the ſtrength of our Propoſition.

5. Wherin I differ from the Anabapt. who affirme that *Iob* deſpaired.

And though I confeſſe, I have not read any to expound theſe words of *Iob* directly thus, and though I know the opinion in generall of his deſpairing, be thus much diſcredited, that it is held by the *Anabaptiſts*, yet, beſides that, it is not juſt nor ingenuous, to condemn all that a condemnd man ſays, (for even a leprous man may have one hand clean to take and give withall. And S. *Hier.* is inexcuſable, in that point of his ſlippery zeal, in his behaviour towards *Vigilantius*, yea the *Trent* Councell it ſelfe is obnoxious therein, for condemning Names of Authors, and not Books. Beſides this I ſay, the Anabaptiſts differ from me in their end and purpoſe, for they impute deſpaire to *Iob*, onely to infirme the Authority of the booke, which ſciſmatically they labour to rent from the Canon of Scripture: But I juſtly with the conſent of all Chriſtian Churches admitting it for ſuch, ſay, that *Iob* might keep his ſanctity, and the Book his Dignity, and yet he might have a purpoſe to kill himſelfe.

6. *S. Hierome* and the *Trent Councell* erre in condemning all which a condemned man ſaith.

For very many reverend Authors in the Reformed Church, not raſhly to be forſaken, have imputed to our moſt bleſſed Saviour, as neer approaches

7. Of them which impute deſpayre unto Chriſt.

proaches, to a more dangerous kind of deſpaire, then we impute to *Iob*, without diminiſhing him, or his Scriprures.

SECT. VI.

1. Of the place *Iob* 2. 4.

I finde alſo another place of *Iob* obtruded. [*Skin for skin, and all that ever a man hath will he give for life.*] From which words they argue a Naturall love in us to this life.

Let it be true, (though the Devill ſay it, for the words are his) that our ſenſitive Nature is too indulgent to this life, (though I feare I have offended and ſurfetted you in the firſt Part with Examples of meer Naturall and Senſitive men, which have choſen death,) yet will that prove that our Reaſonable Nature may in no caſe correct that enormity? This is as ſtrong againſt Gods outward calling us to him by ſickneſſe, or perſecution, as againſt any ſuch inward motions.

SECT. VII.

1. Of the place *Eccl.* 20. 16.

As unproperly, and unprofitably to their ends and purpoſe, do they offer that place of *Eccleſiaſticus*, [*Non eſt cenſus ſupra cenſum ſalutis Corporis,*] which I place here, though out of Order, becauſe of the affinity betweene this place, and the laſt, and that one anſwer, is, at leaſt, enough for them both. For, though this place may

may prove that wee naturally love this body, (yet it is not of the safety of the body, as if all men desired that the body might live, but it is of bodily health whilst it doth live,) yet it proves not, that wee may in no case abandon it.

2. This place is not of safety, but of health.

SECT. VIII.

The most proper, and direct, and strongest place is the Commandement; for that is of Morall Law, [*Thou shalt not kill*;] and this place is cited by all to this purpose.

1. Of the place *Exodus* 20.

But I must have leave to depart from (a) S. *Augustines* opinion here, who thinks that this Commandement is more earnestly bent upon a mans selfe, then upon another; because here is no addition, and in the other, there is, [*Against thy Neighbour*;] for certainely, I am as much forbid by that Commandement to accuse my selfe falsely, as my Neighbour, though onely he be named. And by this I am as much forbid to kill my neighbour as my selfe, though none be named. So, as it is within the circuit of the Command, it may also bee within the exceptions thereof. For though the words be generall, *Thou shalt not kill*, we may kill beasts; Magistrates may kill men; and a private man in a just warre, may not onely kill, contrary to the sound of this Commandement, but hee may kill his Father, contrary to another.

a 23. q: 5. *Si non licet.*

2. S. *August.* thinks this law to concerne ones self more directly then another.

3. This law hath many exceptions.

4. Lawes of the first Table are *strictioris vinculi*, then of the later.

When two naturall Lawes contrary to one another occurre, we are bound to that which is *strictioris vinculi*.

As all Lawes concerning the Honour of God, and Faith, are in respect of the second Table, which is directed upon our Neighbour by Charitie. If therefore there could bee a necessity, that I must doe an act of Idolatry, or kill, I were bound to the later.

5. A case wherin it is probable that a man must kill himself.

By which Rule, If perchance a publique exemplary person, which had a just assurance that his example would governe the people, should be forced by a Tyrant, to doe an act of Idolatry, (although by circumstances he might satisfie his owne conscience, that he sinned not in doing it,) and so scandalize and endanger them, if the matter were so carried and disguised, that by no way he could let them know, that he did it by constraint, but voluntarily, I say, perchance he were better kill himselfe.

a *Acatius de privil. l. c. 3.*

It is a safe Rule, [(a) *Iuri Divino derogari non potest, nisi ipsa derogatio juri Divino constet.*] But since it is not thought a violating of that Rule,

b *Navr. Manual. cap. 15. n. 2.*

[(b) *To kill by publique Authority, or in a just Warre, or defence of his life, or of anothers,*] why may not our case be as safe and innocent?

c *Supra.*

If any importune me to shew this Priviledge, or exemption of this case from the Commandment, I may with (c) *Sotus* retort it, and call for their priviledge to kill a Day-thiefe, or any man in defence of another.

And

And as theſe Lawes may be mediately and ſecondarily deduced from the conformity of other Lawes, and from a generall Authority which God hath afforded all Soveraignes, to provide as neceſſities ariſe; So may our caſe bee derived as well from that neceſſary obligation which lyes alwayes upon us, of preferring Gods glorie above all humane reſpects. So that we cannot be put to ſhew, or pleade any exemption, but when ſuch a caſe ariſes, wee ſay that that caſe never was within the reach of that Law. Which is alſo true of all the other which we called exemptions before.

6 As Lawes againſt Daytheeves may be deduced from the Law of God authorizing Princes, ſo may this from the Commandement, of preferring Gods glory.

For, whatſoever might have beene done before the Law, (as this might, if it be neither againſt Nature, nor Juſtice, from both which we make account that wee have acquitted it,) upon that, this Commandement never fell, not extended to it.

7 Whatſoever might have been done before the Law, this Law forbids not.

SECT. IX.

I have found alſo a place urged out of the Booke of *Wiſdome*, which is, [*Seeke not death in the errour of your life.*] Which being ever coupled with another place in *Deuteronomie*, by collation of the two places it appeares, That that which is forbidden there, is Idolatry, and by Death is meant the *Second Death*, or the way to it.

1 Of the place *Sap.* 1. 12.

Deut. 4. 24.

And ſo this Diſtinction which was intended for

for the places cited from the Books of the old Teſtament, ſhall here have an end; and to the next we allow thoſe of the New.

Diſtinct. III.

SECT. I.

1. Of the place *Matt.* 4. 6.

OF which the firſt that I have obſerved is in *Matthew* when the Devil tempts Chriſt thus, [*If thou be the Son of God, caſt thy ſelf downe.*] With all Expoſitors I confeſſe, this was a temptation to vain glory, and therefore moſt appliabl to our caſe, where we make account, that we work ſomwhat to the ſervice of God, and advancement of his glory, when we allow this to be done; and it is a very ſlippery paſſage, and a devout man were out of the nature of devotion, likelier to erre that way, then a worldly, but that the hand of God is extended to the protection of ſuch.

2. Chriſt, where it conduced to his owne ends, did as much as the Devill did tempt him to, in this place.

But directly this place will not ſhake, nor attempt our propoſition, for though Chriſt would not ſatisfie the Devill, nor diſcover himſelfe, yet he did as much when it conduced to his owne ends, as the Devill tempted him to in this place, or the other; both in changing the ſpecies and nature

nature of water into Wine, and in exposing himselfe to certaine danger when he walked upon the waters. Christ refused no difficultie, nor abstained from Miracles, when he knew he profited the beholders; nor doe I say, that in any other case, then when we are probably and excusably assured, that it is to a good end, this may be lawfull to us.

SECT. II.

The next place is in the Acts of the Apostles. [*The keeper of the prison drew out his Sword, and would have killed himselfe, supposing the Prisoners had beene gone; But Paul cryed, Doe thy selfe no harme, for we are all here.*] To which I say, That by the same Spirit by which *Paul* being in the inner Prison in the darke, knew what the Keeper thought, and what hee was about to doe without, hee knew also Gods purpose to be glorified in the conversion of him and his Family; and therefore did not onely reclaime him from that purpose, which was inordinate, and for his owne sake, to escape punishment, (in which yet wee may observe how presently Mans nature inclines him to this remedy) but also forbears to to make his benefit of this Miracle, and to escape away: and so, though he rescue the Keeper, he betrayes himselfe.

1. Of the place *Acts* 16. 17.

2. *S. Paul* knew Gods purpose of baptising the keeper.

3. Els saith *Caluin*, he had frustrated Gods way to give him an escape by the keepers death.

And therefore *Calvin* upon this place makes to himselfe this objection, [*That* Paul *seeing all his*

his hope of escape to consist in the death of the Keeper, neglected that way of liberty which God offered him, when he restrained the Keeper from killing himselfe.] And he answers it onely thus, [*That hee had a conscience and insight into Gods purpose and decree herein.*] For otherwise, if he had not had that (which very few attaine to have) it seemes he ought to have permitted the keeper to proceed, to facilitate thereby his way of escaping.

SECT. III.

1. Of the place *Rom.* 3. 8.

Which also inferres some answer to another place of Saint *Paul*, where hee delivers and discharges himselfe, and his fellow Apostles, of having taught this Doctrine, [*That a man might doe evill, that good might come thereof.*] And consequently it is well and by just Collection pronounced that he forbids that Doctrine.

2. How *Paul* forbids evil to be done for good.

And we also humbly subscribe to that Rule, and accept it so, as Saint *Paul* intends it; that is, in things which Nature, and not Circumstance makes evill. And in these also, when any such circumstance doth make them evill, as another circumstance to the contrary doth not præponderate and over-rule this. This therefore we must have liberty to enlighten with a larger discourse.

3. God always inflicteth *Malum pœnæ* by Instruments.

Of the evils which seeme to us to bee of punishment, of which kind Death is, God ever makes others his executioners; for the greatest

greateſt of all, though it be ſpirituall, which is Induration, is not ſo wrought by God himſelfe immediately, as his ſpirituall comforts are, but Occaſionally, and by Deſertion.

Sometimes in theſe God imployes his Angels, ſometime the Magiſtrate, ſomtimes our ſelves. Yet all which God doth in this life by any of theſe, is but Phyſicke: for (a) even excæcation and induration is ſent to further Salvation in ſome, and inflicted medicinally. And theſe miniſters and inſtruments of his, are our Phyſitians, and wee may not refuſe any bitterneſſe, no not that which is naturally poyſon, being wholeſomely corrected by them. For as in (b) Cramps which are contortions of the Sinewes, or in Tetars, which are rigors and ſtiffeneſſes in the Muſcles, wee may procure to our ſelfe a fever to thaw them, or we may procure them in a burning feaver, to condenſe and attemper our bloud againe, ſo in all rebellions and diſobediences of our fleſh, wee may miniſter to our ſelves ſuch corrections and remedies, as the Magiſtrate might, if the fact were evident. But, becauſe though for prevention of evill, wee may doe all the offices of a Magiſtrate upon our ſelves, in ſuch ſecret caſes, but whether we have that authority to doe it after or no, eſpecially in Capitall matters, is diſputable, and at this time, wee need not affirme it preciſely, I will examine the largeneſſe of that power no farther now.

4. Induration it ſelf is ſometime medicinall.

a *Aqui.* 12. *q.* 79. *ar.* 4. *con.*

b *Hippocrat. Aphor. l.* 2. 38.

5. Wee may correct in our ſelves one diſeaſe by another.

But descend to that kinde of evill, which must of necessity be understood in this place of *Paul*: which is, that we account naturally evill. And even in that, the Bishops of *Rome* have exercised their power, (c) to dispence with *Bigamy*, which is in their doctrine directly against Gods Commandement, and therefore naturally evill. So did (d) *Nicholas* the fift, dispense with a Bishop in *Germany*, to consult with Witches, for recovery of his health; and it were easie to amasse many cases of like boldnesse.

In like manner (e) the Imperiall Law tollerates Vsurie, Prescription, *Mala fitei*, and Deceit *ad Medium*, and expressely allowes (f) Witchcraft, to good purposes. [*Conformably to which Law*, Paracelsus *sayes*, *It is all one whether God or the Devill cure, so the Patient be well.*]

And so the (g) Canons have prescribed certain rules of doing evill, when we are overtaken with perplexities, to chuse the least, of which (h) S *Gregory* gives a naturall example, [*That a man attempted upon a high wall, and forced to leape it, would take the lowest place of the wall.*] And agreeably to all these, the (k) *Casuists* say, [*That in extreame necessitie, I sinne not if I induce a man to lend me mony upon usury; And the reason is, because I incline him to a lesse sinne, which is usury, when else he should be a homicide, by not relieving me.*] And in this fashion (l) God himselfe is said to work evill in us, because when our heart is full of evill purposes, he governs and disposes

6. In things evill in such sence as *Paul* taketh them here, Popes dayly doe dispence.

c *Dist.* 34. *lector gloss.*

d *Bodinus Dæmon. l.* c5.

e *Windek de consens. et dissens leg. et Can. ca.* 11.

7. So doe the Civill Laws.

f *Cod. tit. de malef. l.* 4. §. *eorum.*

g *Paracel. l. de morb. cad.*

h *Dist.* 14. *cap. Duo mala.*

i *Dist. ead. cap. Nerui.*

k *Nav. Man. c.* 17. *num.* 263.

8 So do Canons.

l *Bellar. de Amiss. grat. & stat. peccat. l.* 2. *c.* 3. ex *Hug. de vict. & Tho.*

9 So doth God occasion lesse sin to avoid greater.

disposes us rather to this then to that evill, wherin though all the vitiousnesse be ours, and evill, yet the order is from God, and good. Yea, he doth positively encline one to some certain evill thus, That he doth infuse into a man some good thoughts, by which, he, out of his vitiousnesse takes occasion to thinke he were better doe some other sinne then that which he intended. Since therefore all these lawes and practises concurre in this, that we sometime doe such evill, not onely for expresse and positive good, but to avoid greater evill, all which seems to be against this doctrine of S. *Paul*.

9. What any other may dispence withall in us, in extremity we may dispence within our selves. *Supra*.

And since, whatsoever any humane power may dispence withall in us, we, in extream necessity, in impossibility of recourse to better counsell, in an erring conscience, and in many such cases, may dispence with our selves, (for that Canon of *duo mala*, leaves it to our naturall reason, to judge, and value, and compare, and distinguish betweene those two evills which shall concurre.)

10. Yet noe such dispensation changeth the nature of things, therefore that particular was never naturally evill.

And since for all this, it is certaine, that no such dispensation from another, or from my selfe, doth so alter the nature of the thing, that it becomes thereby the more or the lesse evill, to mee there appeares no other interpretation safe, but this, That there is no externall act naturally evill; and that circumstances condition them, and give them their nature; as scandall makes an indifferent thing hai-

nous at that time; which, if ſome perſon go out of the roome, or winke, is not ſo.

11. The Law it ſelf is neither good nor evill.

The Law it ſelfe, which is given us as a light, that we might not ſtumble, and by which we ſee, not what is evill naturally (for that we ſee naturally, and that was ſo even, to us, before the law declared it) but what would bee evill (that is produce evill effects,) if we did it at that time, and ſo circumſtanced, is not abſolutely good, but in ſuch meaſure, and in ſuch reſpects, as that which it forbids is evill. And therefore (m) *Picus* comparing the Law, to the firmament, (as *Moſes* accepts the word) as he obſerves, that the ſecond day, when God made the firmament, he did not ſay, that it was good, as he did of every other days work; and yet it was not evill, (for then ſaith *Picus*, it could not have received the ſunne, as if it had beene good, it had not needed it.) So he reprehends the *Manichees*, for ſaying that the Law was evill, yet he ſticks to that of (n) *Ezechiel*, That it was not good. That evill therefore which by this place of S. *Paul* is forbidden, is either Acts of infidelity, which no diſpentation can deliver from the reach of the Law, or els, ſuch acts as being by our nature, and reaſon, and approbation of nations reputed evill, or declared by law or cuſtome to be ſuch, becauſe of there ordinary evill effects, doe caſt a guiltines upon the doer, ordinarily, and for the moſt part, and ever except his caſe be exempt and priviledged. This moved

12. As *Picus* notes comparing it to the firmament.

m *Heptapl. l. 7. procem.*

n *Ezech.* 20. 25.

13. What evill *Paul* forbids, and why.

moved *Chryſoſtome*, (whom I cited before) to think a ly, and a conſent to adulterery, not evill in *Sarah*: and this rectified S. *Auguſtines* ſqueamiſhnes ſo farre, as to leave us at liberty, to think what we would of that wifes act, which to pay her husbands debt, let out her ſelf one night. For if any of theſe things had been once evill naturally, they could never recover of that ſickneſſe, but (as I inſinuated before) as thoſe things which we call miracles, were written in the hiſtory of Gods purpoſe, as exactly, and were as certainly to come to paſſe, as the riſing and ſetting of the ſunne, and as naturally, *in tota compagine naturæ*, (for there is no interlining in that book of God:) So in that his eternall Regiſter where he foreſees all our acts, he hath preſerued and defended, from that ordinary corruption of evill purpoſe, of inexcuſable ignorance, of ſcandall, and of ſuch other inquinations of indifferent things, (as he is ſaid to have done our B. Lady from originall ſinne in her inanimation,) Some of thoſe acts of ours, which to thoſe who doe not ſtudiouſly diſtinguiſh circumſtances, or ſee not the doers conſcience, and teſtimony of Gods ſpirit, may at the firſt taſt have ſome of the brackiſhnes of ſin. Such was (o) *Moſes* killing of the *Egyptians*; for which there appears no eſpeciall calling from God. But becauſe this falls not often: *S. Paul* would not embolden us, to do any of thoſe things which are cuſtomarily reputed evill.

But

Supra.

14. Nothing which is once evill can ever recover of that

Supra.

15. Three acts were in God's decree preſerued from thoſe ſtaines which make things evill, ſo as miracles were written in his book of nature, though not in our copy; and ſo, as our Lady is ſaid to be preſeru'd from originall ſinne.

o *Exod.* 1. 12.

16. Such was *Moſes* killing the Egyptian.

But if others be delighted with the more ordinary interpretation of this place, that it ſpeaks of all that which we call ſinne, I will not refute that interpretation, ſo they make not the Apoſtles rule, (though in this place this be not given properly and exactly for a rule;) more ſtrickt than the morall præcepts of the *Decalogue* it ſelf, in which, as in all rules there are naturally included and incorporated ſome exceptions, which if they allow in this, they are ſtill at the beginning; for this caſe may fall within thoſe exceptions.

17. If this place be taken of all kind of evill, it muſt admit exception, as well as the Decalogu.

Otherwiſe, that the generall application of this rule, is not proper, as by infinite other places, ſo it appears evidently by that in (p) *Bellarmine*, where he ſays, that by reaſon of this rule, a man may not with neglecting a poore neighbour, adorne a church; Yet there are a great many caſes, wherein we may neglect this poore neighbour; and therefore that is not naturally evill. And certainly whoſoever is delighted with ſuch arguments, and ſuch an application of this text, would not only have objected this rule to *Lot*, when he offered his Daughters, (for there it might have colour) but would have joyned with *Iudas*, when the woman anointed Chriſt; and have told her, that allthough the office which ſhee did were good, yet the waſt which ſhee made firſt, was evill, and againſt this rule.

18. Otherwiſe the application which *Bellarm.* and others make of it will be intollerable.

p *De eccl. ſanct. l. 4. cap. 7.*

SECT.

SECT. IIII.

The same Apostle doth in divers other places use this phrase, *That we are the Temples of the Holy Ghost*; And from thence is argued, that it is an unlawfull Sacriledge to demolish or to deface those Temples. But wee are so the Temples of God, as we are his Images: that is, by his residing in our hearts.

Of the places 2 *Cor.* 6.16. 1 *Cor.* .16. & 6.16.

And who may doubt, but that the blessed Soules of the departed, are still his Temples, and Images? Even amongst heathens, those Temples which were consecrated to their gods, might in cases of publique good or harme, be demolished, and yet the ground remaine sacred.

19 The dead are still his Temples, and Images. *Silvius Com. ad leges.*

20 Heathens temples might be demolished, yet the soile remain sacred.

And in the two first places, it onely a Dehortation from polluting our hearts, which are Gods Temples, with Idolatry, or other sinne. In the other place he calles our materiall body, the temple: and he makes it to us an argument that we should flye from fornication, because therein wee trespas against our owne body. And so here arises a double argument, that we may not doe injurie to our owne body, neither as it is ours, nor as it is Gods.

In the first of these then, he sayes, [*A Fornicator sinnes against his body*;] for as hee sayd two verses before, [*Hee makes himselfe one body with an Harlot*,] and so hee diminishes the dig-

21 *Pauls* reason is in Cases where we avile our selves: here wee advance our selves.

nity of his owne perſon. But is it ſo, in our Caſe? When he withdrawes and purges it from all corruptions, and delivers it from all the inquinations, and venime, and maligne Machinations of his, and Gods adverſaries, and prepares it by Gods inſinuation and concurrence, to that glory, which without death, cannot bee attained.

Is it a leſſe dignitie, that himſelfe bee the Prieſt of God, and that himſelfe be the Sacrifice of God, then that he be the Temple? But ſayes *Paul*, [(a) *Your body is the Temple of God, and you are not your owne.*] But laies *Calvine* here, you are not ſo your owne, that you may live at your owne will, or abuſe your body with pollutions and uncleanneſſe. Our body is ſo much our owne, as we may uſe it to Gods glory; and it is ſo little our owne, as when hee is pleaſed to have it, we doe well in reſigning it to him, by what Officer ſoever he accept it, whether by Angell, Sickneſſe, Perſecution, Magiſtrate, or our ſelves. Onely bee carefull of this laſt leſſon, in which hee amaſſes and gathers all his former Doctrine, [(b) *Glorifie God in your body, and in your ſpirit, for they are his.*]

a *Verſ.* 19. 22 That our body is not our own, how it is to be underſtood here in *Paul.*

b *Verſ.* 20.

SECT. V.

The place of the *Epheſians* hath ſome affinity with this; which is, [*But let us follow the truth*

1 Of the place *Epheſ.* 4. 15. 16

in

in love, and in all things grow up into him, which is the head, that is Christ, till we are all met together, unto a perfect man.] By which wee receive the honour to be one body with Christ our head; which is (a) after more expressely declared, [*We are Members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bone.*] And therefore, they say, that to withdraw our selves, which are limmes of him, is not onely homicide of our selves, who cannot live without him, but a Paricide towards him, who is our common Father.

a Cap. 5. v. 30.

But as in Fencing, Passion layes a man as open as unskilfulnesse, and a troubled desire to hitt, makes one not onely misse, but receive a wound; so out of an inordinate fervour, to strike home, hee which alledgeth this place, overreacheth to his owne danger; for onely this is taught herein, that all our growth and vegetation flowes from our head, Christ. And that he hath chosen to himselfe for the perfection of his body, limmes proportionall thereunto, and that, as a soule through all the body, so this care must live, and dwell in every part, that it be ever ready to doe his proper function, and also to succour those other parts, for whose relieſe or sustentation it is framed, and planted in the body. So that herein there is no litterall construction to be admitted, as though the body of Christ could be imperfited, by the removing of any man. For, as from a tree, some leaves passe their naturall course and season, and

fall againe being withered by age, and ſome fruits are gathered unripe, and ſome ripe, and ſome branches which in a ſtorme fall off, are carryed to the fire; So in this body of Chriſt, the Church, (I meane that which is viſible) all theſe are alſo fulfilled and performed, and yet the body ſuffers no maims, much leſſe the head any detriment.

2 This place gives arguments to all which ſpare not themſelves for reliefe of others.

This place therefore is ſo farre from giving encouragement to any particular man to be carefull of his owne well being, as the Expoſitors (of what perſwaſion ſoever in controverted points) accept from hence an argument, that for the eſtabliſhing, and ſuſtentation of the whole body, a man is bound to depart with all reſpects to himſelfe, and give his life to ſtrengthen them which are weake.

And this place, as a common Conduit head hath affoorded juſtification for Martyrdomes, for peſtilent viſitations, and for all thoſe Deſertions of our ſelves, and of our naturall right of preſerving our ſelves, which wee had occaſion to inſiſt upon before.

SECT. VI.

1. Of the place *Eph.* 5.

As therefore that conſtruction doth well conſiſt with thoſe words, ſo doth it alſo with the words in the next Chapter, [*No man ever hated his owne fleſh, but nouriſhed it, &c.*] Of which Hate, becauſe we are to ſpeake when wee come to

to Christs Commandement of Hating our life, we will here onely say, with (a) *Marlorate* upon this place, [*He hates not his flesh, who hates the desires thereof, and would subject it to the Spirit: no more then a Goldsmith hates that gold, which hee casts into a furnace to purifie, and reduce to a better fashion.*] And, because out of the Armory of Scripture I have not found that they take any better weapons, nor any more, we may here end this Distinction.

a *Marlor. in hunc locum.*

2. How *Marlor.* expounds this hate.

Distinction IV.

SECT. I.

IN the next our busines is, to try of what force and proofe their armes are against their adversaries forces. Of which we shall oppose two sorts; The first naturall and assured Subjects, which are, Reasons arising naturally from places of Scripture, and these, in this distinction; The other, Examples, as Auxiliaries. For though we rely not upon them, yet we have this advantage in that kind, that our aduersaries can make no use, nor profit of Examples. And therefore that answer which both *Peter Martyr*, and *Lavater* from him make, that we must not live by examples, and that if examples proved

1. Of places of scriptures on the other part.

2. We may, but our adversaries may not make use of examples. to which the answer of *Martyr* and *Lavater* is weake.

any thing they had the ſtronger ſide, (that is, there have beene more men which have not killed themſelves, then which have,) may well ſeeme from peremptorineſſe, and lazineſſe, and impoſſibillity of better defence, to have too much allay, to be currant. To prepare us therefore to a right underſtanding, and application of theſe places of ſcripture, we muſt arreſt awhile vpon the nature, and degrees, and effects of charity; the mother, and forme of all vertue; which ſhall not onely lead us to heaven, (for faith opens us the doore) but ſhall continue with us when we are there, when both Faith, and Hope, are ſpent and uſeleſſe.

3. The Nature, degrees, and effects of Charity.

We ſhall no where find a better pourtrait of charity, then that which S. *Auguſtine* hath drawne: ſhe loves not that which ſhould not be loved; ſhe neglects not that which ſhould be loved; ſhe beſtows not more love upon that, which deſerves leſſe; nor doth ſhe equally love more and leſſe worthines; nor upon equall worthines, beſtow more and leſſe love. (a) To this charity the ſame bleſſed and happy Father, proportions this growth. [*Inchoated, increaſed, growne great, and perfected, and this laſt is, ſaith he, when in reſpect of it, we contemne this life.*] And yet he acknowledgeth a higher charity then this. For (b) *P. Lombard* allowing charity this growth, [*beginning, proficient, perfect, more, and moſt perfect.*] he cites (c) S. *Auguſtine* who calls [*that perfect charity to be reu-*

4. S. *Auguſt.* pourtraite of her.

a *De nature et gratia cap. ult.*

5. Of her higheſt perfection, beyond that which *P. Lombard* obſerved out of *Aug.*

b *Lomb. l. 3. Diſt. 3.*

c *In epiſt. Io. tract. 5.*

die

die to dy for another.] But when he comes to that, then which none can be greater, he says then, the Apostle came to (d) *cupio dissolvi.*

For as [(e) *one may love God with all his heart, and yet he may grow in that, and love God more with all his heart, for* (f) *the first was commanded in the Law, and yet* (g) *counsail of perfection was given to him, who said that he had fullfilled the first commandement,*] So as S. *Augustine* found a degree above that charity, which made a man *paratum ponere* which is *cupere*, so there is a degree above that, which is to doe it.

This is that vertue, by which (h) Martyrdome, which is not such of it self, becomes an act of highest perfection.

And this is that vertue, which (i) assureth any suffering which proceeds from it to be infallibly accompanied with the grace of God. Vpon assurednes therefore, and testimony of a rectified conscience, that we have a charitable purpose, let us consider how farre we may adventure upon authority of Scripture in this matter which we have in hand.

d *Phil.* 1.23

e *Serarius triheresi. l.* 1. *ca.* 8.

f *Deut.* 6. 5.

g *Mat.* 5. 6. He who loves God with all his heart, may love him more

h *Aqui.* 22. *q.* 124. *ar.* 3.

i *Aqui.* 22. *q.* 136. *ar.* 3. 7. Any suffering in charity hath infalibly the grace of God. By *Aquin.*

SECT. II.

First therefore by the frame and working of Saint *Pauls* argument to the *Corinthians*, [*Though I give my body that I be burned, and have not love, it profiteth nothing.*] These two things appeare evidently.

1. Of the place 1 *Cor.* 13. 4.

First,

First, That in a generall notion and common reputation, it was esteemed a high degree of perfection to dye so, and therefore not against the Law of Nature. And secondly, by this exception, *(without Charity)* it appeares, that with Charity it might well and profitably be done.

2. By this in common reputation, that was a degree of perfection to dye so. And charity made it acceptable.

For the first, if any thinke that the Apostle here takes example of an impossible thing, as when it is sayd, [*If an Angel from heaven teach other doctrine,*] he will, I thinke, correct himselfe, if he consider the former verses, and the Apostles progresse in his argument; wherein to dignifie Charity, the most that hee can, hee undervalues all other gifts, which were there ambitiously affected.

3. *Paul* speaks of a thing which might lawfully be done, for such are all his gradations in this argument.

For Eloquence he sayes, it is nothing to have all Languages, no not of Angels; which is not put literally, for they have none; but to expresse a high degree of Eloquence, as *Calvine* sayes here. Or, as *Lyra* sayes, by language of Angels is meant, the desire of communicating our conceptions to one another. And then he adds, That knowledge of Mysteries and Prophecies, is also nothing; which was also much affected. And for Miraculous Faith, it is also nothing.

4. Tongues of Angels in what sence in this place.

Calvin.

For the first of these guifts, doth not make a man better; for *Balams* Asse could speake, and was still an Asse. And the second *Judas* had, and the *Pharisees*. And the third is so small a matter, that as much as a *graine of Musterseed is*

5. Speech in the Asse, understanding of mysteries in *Iudas*, miraculous faith make not the possessor the better.

enough

enough to remove mountaines. All these therefore were faisable things, and were sometimes done. So also, after he had passed through the gifts of knowledge, and gifts of utterance, hee presents the gifts of working in the same manner; and therefore, as he sayes, *If I feed the poore with all my goods,* (which he presents as a harder thing then either of the other, (for in the other God gives me, but here I give other) yet possible to be done.) So he presents the last, *If I give my body,* as the hardest of all, and yet, as all the rest, sometimes to be done.

That which I observed secondly to arise from this argument, was, That with Charity such a death might be acceptable. And though I know the *Donatists* are said to have made this use of these words, yet, because the intent and end conditions every action, and infuses the poyson, or the nourishment which they which follow suck from thence, and we know that the *Donatists* rigorously and tyrannously racked and detorted thus much from this place, That they might present themselves to others promiscuously to bee killed, and if that were denied to them, they might kill themselves, and them who refused it.

6 How I differ from the *Donatists* arguing from this place, that in charity *self-homicide* was alwaies lawfull.

Yet, I say, I doubt not but thus much may naturally be collected from hence, that by this word, *If I give my body,* is insinuated somewhat more then a prompt and willing yeelding of it, when I am enforced to it, by the

7 To give my Body, is more then to let it be taken.

perſecuting Magiſtrate.

Metaph. in Niceph. Martyr.

8 How *Nicephorus* the martyre, gave his body in *Sapritius* his roome, who recanted.

And that theſe words will juſtifie the fact of the Martyr *Nicephorus*, being then in perfect Charity. Whoſe caſe was, That having had ſome enmitie with *Sapritius*, who was brought to the place where he was to receive the bloudy crowne of Martyredome, he fell downe to *Sapritius*, and begged from him then, a pardon of all former bitterneſſes. But *Sapritius* elated with the glory of Martyredome, refuſed him; but was preſently puniſhed; for his faith coold, and he recanted, and lived. And *Nicephorus* ſtanding by, ſtepped into his roome, and cryed, I am alſo a Chriſtian, and ſo provoked the Magiſtrate to execute him; leaſt from the faintneſſe of *Sapritius*, the cauſe might have received a wound, or a ſcorne. And this I take to bee *Giving of his body*.

9 There may be a caſe that a man bound to give his body, cannot doe it otherwiſe then by *ſelfe-homicide*.

Of which, as there may be ſuch neceſſitie for confirming of weaker Chriſtians, that a man may be bound to doe it, as in this caſe, is very probable. So there may bee caſes in men very exemplary, and in the cunning and ſubtile carriage of the Peſecutor, as one can no other way give his body for teſtimony of Gods truth, to which he may then be bound, but by doing it himſelfe.

SECT.

SECT. III.

As therefore Naturally and Customarily men thought it good to dye so, and that such a death with charity was acceptable, so is it generally said by Christ, [*That the good Shepherd doth give his life for his sheepe.*] Which is a justifying and approbation of our inclination thereunto. For to say, The good doe it, is to say, They which doe it are good.

1 Of the places *Joh.* 10. 11. & *Joh.* 15. 13.

And as we are all sheep of one fold, so in many cases, we are all shepherds of one another, and owe one another this dutie, of giving our temporall lives, for anothers spirituall advantage; yea, for his temporall. For (a) that I may abstaine from purging my selfe, when anothers crime is imputed to me, is grounded upon such another (b) Text as this, where it is said, *The greatest love, is to bestow his life for his friend.* In which, and all of this kind, we must remember, that we are commanded to doe it so, as Christ did it; and how Christ gave his body, we shall have another place to consider.

2 I need not purge my self, when anothers crime is imputed to me.

a *Sot. de teg. Secret. Memb.* 1. *q.* 3.

b *Joh.* 15. 13.

SECT. IV.

Hereupon becauſe Saint *Peters* zeale ſo forward, and carried him ſo high, that hee would dye for the Shepherd; for ſo he ſaies, [*I will lay downe my life, for thy ſake.*] And this, as all

1 Of the place *Iob.* 13. 37.

2 *Peters* readineſſe was naturall. *Pauls* deliberate.

Expoſitors ſay, was meerely and purely out of naturall affection, without examination of his owne ſtrength to performe it; but preſently and roundly Nature carryed him to that promiſe. And upon a more deliberate and orderly reſolution, Saint *Paul* witneſſeth of himſelfe ſuch a willingneſſe to dye for his brethren, [*I will be gladly beſtowed for your ſoules.*]

2 *Cor.* 12.15.

SECT. V.

1 Of the place *Ioh.* 10.15.

A Chriſtian nature reſts not in knowing thus much, That we may doe it, That Charitie makes it good, That the good doe it, and that wee muſt alwaies promiſe, that is, encline to doe it, and doe ſomething towards it, but will have the perfect fulneſſe of doing it in the reſolution and doctrine, and example of our bleſſed Saviour, who ſaies, *de facto*. [*I lay down my life for my ſheepe.*] And ſaith *Muſculus*, hee uſeth the preſent word, becauſe hee was ready to doe it: and as (a) *Paul* and *Barnabas*, men yet alive; are ſaid to have laid downe their lives for Chriſt.] But I rather thinke, (becauſe expoſing to danger, is not properly call'd a dying,) that Chriſt ſaid this now, becauſe his Paſſion was begun; for all his converſations here were degrees of exinanition.

2 Why Chriſt ſaies this in the preſent time.

2 *Act.* 15.26.

To expreſſe the abundant and overflowing charitie of our Saviour, all words are defective; for if we could expreſſe all which he did, that came

3 Of the aboundant charity of Chriſt.

came not neere to that which he would doe, if need were. It is obſerved by (b) one, I (confeſſe, too credulous an Authour, but yet one that adminiſters good and wholeſome incitements to Devotion,) That Chriſt going to *Emaus* ſpake of his Paſſion ſo ſleightly, as though he had in three dayes forgot all that he had ſuffered for us.

And that Chriſt in an apparition to Saint *Charles*, ſayes, that he would be content to dy againe, if need were.

Yea, to (c) Saint *Brigit* he ſaid, [*That for any one ſoule he would ſuffer as much in every limme, as he had ſuffered for all the world in his whole body.*]

And (d) this is noted for an extreame high degree of Charity, out of *Anſelme*, that his B. Mother ſaid, [*Rather then he ſhould not have been Crucified, ſhee would have done it with her owne hands.*

And certainly his charity was not inferiour to hers; He did as much as any could be willing to doe. And therefore, as himſelf ſaid, [*No man can take away my ſoule*] And [*I have power to lay it down*;] So without doubt, no man did take it away, nor was there any other then his own will, the cauſe of his dying at that time; many Martyrs having hanged upon Croſſes many dayes alive: And the theeves were yet alive; And therefore (e) *Pilate* wondred to heare that Chriſt was dead. [*His Soule, ſaith* (f) *S. Aug.*

b *De Suidone. pa.* 1. *Notæ in Ca.* 11.

4 Of his ſpeech going to *Emaus.*

5 Of his Apparition to Saint *Charles.*

c *Revel. Brig. l.* 1. *ca.* 59.
6 Of the Revelation to St. *Brigit.*

d *Suidon. p.* 1. *Not. in Ca.* 16.
7 Of his Mothers Charitiy.

8 That none could take away his ſoule.
9 His owne will the onely cauſe of his dying ſo ſoone, by St. *Aug.*
10 And by *Aquin*, becauſe he had all his ſtrength.
e *Mar.* 15.
f *De Trinit. l.* 1. *cap.* 13.

did not leave his body constrained, but because he would, and when he would, and how he would.] Of which (g) S. *Thomas* produces this symptome, That he had yet his bodies nature in her full streng h, because at the last moment he was able to cry with a loud voice. And (h) *Marlorate* gathers it upon this, that whereas our heads decline after our death by the slackness of the sinews and muscles, Christ did first of himself bow downe his head, and then give up the ghost. So, though it be truly said i)[*After they have scourged him, they will put him to death,*] yet it is said so, because malitiously and purposely to kill him they inflicted those paines upon him; which would in time have killed him, but yet nothing which they had done occasioned his death so soone.

And therefore (k) S. *Thomas*, a man neither of unholy thoughts, nor of bold or irreligious or scandalous phrase or elocution, (yet I adventure not to farre in his behalfe as (l) *Sylvester* doth, [*that it is impossible that hee should have spoken any thing against faith or good manners,*] forbeares not to say, [*That Christ was so much the cause of his death, as he is of his wetting, which might and would not shut the windowe, when the raine beats in.*]

This actuall emission of his soule, which is death, and which was his own act, and before his naturall time, (m) (which his best beloved Apostle could imitate, who also died when he would, and went into his grave, and there gave up

g 3. q. 47. ar. 1. ad 2.

h *Mat.* 27. 50.

11. And by *Marl.* because he bowed his head, and it fell not, as ours in death.

i *Luc.* 18. 33.

12 How it is true that the Jewes put him to death.

13. Of *Aquin.* and *Sylvesters* opinion of him.

k 2. q. 47. ar. 1. *Con.*

l *Verbo matrimonium.*

14. Christ was so the cause of his death, as he is of his wetting, which might, and doth not shut the window in raine by *Aqui.*

15. Who imitated Christ in this actuall emission of the soule.

m *Aquin. supr. Ioh. cap.* 21.

up the Ghost, and buried himselfe, which is reported but of very (n) few others, and by no very credible Authors,) we find thus celebrated, (o) That that is a brave death, which is accepted unconstrained; and that it is an Heroique Act of Fortitude, if a man when an urgent occasion is presented, expose himselfe to a certaine and assured death, as he did.

And it is there said, that Christ did so, as *Saul* did, who thought it foule, and dishonourable to dye by the hand of an Enemy. And that *Apollonia*, and others who prevented the fury of Executioners, and cast themselves into the fire, did therein immitate this act of our Saviour, of giving up his soule, before hee was constrained to do it. So that if the act of our blessed Saviour, in whom there was no more required for death, but that he should wil that his soule should goe out, were the same as *Sauls*, and these Martyrs actuall furtherance, which could not dye without that, then wee are taught that all those places, of *Giving up our bodies to death*, and of *Laying downe the soule*, signifie more then a yeelding to death when it comes.

n *Sophro. prat. Spir. cap. 90. de pater. Anco. Et Surius To. 1. feb. de Sever. Raven.*

m *Sind. Not. in c. 11. ad 6.*

16. Vpon what reasons this fashion of dying in Christ is calld Heroique, and by like epithites.

17. Christ is said to have done herein as *Saul* and *Apol.* and such.

SECT. VI.

And to my understanding there is a further degree of alacrity, and propensenesse to such a death, expressed in that phrase of *John*, [*Hee that hateth his life in this world, shall keepe it unto life*

1 Of the places *Iohn* 12. 25. and *Luc.* 14. 26.

life eternall. And in that of *Luke,* [*Except he hate his owne life, he cannot be my Disciple.*] Such a lothnesse to live is that which is spoken of in the *Hebrews,* (a [*Some were rack'd, and would not bee delivered, that they might receive a better Resurrection.*]

a *Heb.* 11.35.

This place (b) *Calvine* interprets of a readinesse to dye, and expresses it elegantly, To carrie our life in our hands, offering it to God for a Sacrifice. And this (c) the Jesuits in their rule extend thus farre, [*Let every one thinke that this was said directly to him, Hate thy life.*]

b *In Ioh.* 12. 25.

2. Iesuites apply particularly this hate.

c *Reg. Iesuit. Constit. spirit.* 8.

And they who in the other place, accept this phrase, *No man hateth his owne flesh,* to yeeld an argument against *Selfe-homicide* in any case, must also allow that the same hate being commanded here, authorises that act in some case.

3. If the other place, noe man hates his owne flesh, be against homicide; This must be for it.

And Saint *Augustine* apprehending the strength of this place, denies that by the authoritie of it, the *Donatists* can justifie their *Selfe-homicide* when they list to dye, but yet in these cases which are exempt from his rules, this place may encourage a man not to neglect the honour of God, onely upon this reason, that no body else will take his life.

4. S. *August.* denies that this place justifies the Donatists. but not in all cases.

SECT. VII.

1. Of the place 1. *Iohn* 3. 16.

And therefore the holy ghost proceeds more directly in the first Epistle of Saint *Iohn,* and shews us a necessary duty, [*Because he laid downe his*

his life for us, therefore we ought to lay downe our lives for our brethren.] All these places work us to a true understanding of charity, and to a contempt of this life, in respect of it.

2. All these places direct us to do it, as Christ did it, unconstraind.

And as these informe us how ready we must be, So all those places which direct us by the example of Christ, to doe it as he did, shew, that in cases when our lives must be given, we neede not ever attend extrinsique force of others, but as he did in perfect charity, so we in such degrees of it, as this life, and our nature are capable of, must dy by our owne will, rather then his glory be neglected, whensoever, (a) as *Paul* saith, Christ may be magnified in our bodies, or the spirituall good of such another as wee are bound to advance, doth importune it.

a *Phil.* 1. 20.

SECT. VIII.

1. Of the place *Phil* 1. 23.

To which readines of dying for his bretheren, Saint *Paul* had so accustomed himself, and made it his nature, that but for his generall resolution of doing that ever which should promove their happines, he could scarce have obtain'd of himself leave to live. For, at first he says, he knew not which to wish, life or, death; (and therefore generally without some circumstance incline or avert us, they are equall to our nature.) Then after much perplexity, he was resolved, and desired to be loose, and to be with Christ; (therefore a holy man may wish it.) But yet he corrected

2 Of S. *Pauls* gradations to this wish; and his correcting of it.

that againe, becauſe ſaith he, [*To abide in the fleſh, is more needfull for you.*] And therefore charity muſt be the rule of our wiſhes, and actions in this point.

SECT. IX.

1 Of the place *Gal.* 4. 15.

2. This was more then *vitam profundere* by *Calvin.*

There is another place to the *Galatians*, which though it reach not to death, yet it proves that holy men may be ready to expreſſe their loves to another, by violence to themſelves. For he ſaith, [*If it had bene poſſible, you would have plucked out your own eies, and given me:*] And *Calvin* ſaith, [this was more then *vitam profundere.*] And this readines Saint *Paul* reprehends not in them.

SECT. X.

1 Of the place *Rom.* 9. 3.

But of the higheſt degrees of compaſſionate charity for others, is that of the Apoſtle, in contemplation of the *Jewes* dereliction, [*I would wiſh my ſelfe to be ſeperated from Chriſt, for my brethren.*]

2 1 *Cor.* 16. 22.

2. That this *Anathema* was damnation.

The bitterneſſe of which Anathema, himſelf teaches us to underſtand, when in (a) another place, he wiſhes the ſame, [*To thoſe which love not Jeſus Chriſt.* And this fearefull wiſh which charitie excuſed in him, was utter damnation, as all Expoſitors ſay.

And though I beleeve with *Calvine*, that at this

this time, in a zealous fury he remembred not deliberately his own election, and therefore cannot in that respect, be said to have resisted the will of God, yet it remaines, as an argument to us, That Charitie will recompence, and justifie many excesses, which seeme unnaturall, and irregular, and enormous transportations.

3. That he considered not his election at that time.

SECT. XI.

As in this Apostle of the *Gentiles*, so in the Law-giver of the *Jewes*, the like compassion wrought the like effect; and more. For *Moses* rested not in wishing, but face to face argued with God, [*If thou pardon them, thy mercie shall appeare, but if thou wilt not, I pray thee blot my name out of the booke which thou hast written.*]

1 Of the place *Exod.* 32. 32.

I know, that many out of a reasonable Collection, that it became *Moses* to bee reposed, and dispassioned, and of ordinate affections in his conversation with God, are of opinion, that he strayed no further in this wish, and imprecation, then to be content that his name should bee blotted out of the Scriptures, and so to lose the honour of being known to posterity for a remarkable instrument of Gods power and mercie.

2. That this imprecation was not only to be blotted out of the history of the scriptures.

But, since a naturall infirmity could worke so much upon Christ, in whom there may be suspected no inordinatenesse of affections, as to divert him a little, and make him slip a faint wish of escaping the Cup; why might not a brave

3. It was stranger that Christ should admit such a slip downward as to wish an escape from death, then that *Moses* should have such an exaltation upward as to save his nation by perishing. Yet both without inordinatenes.

and noble zeale, exalt *Moſes* ſo much, as to deſire to reſtore ſuch a Nation to the love of God, by his owne deſtruction.

For, as certainely the firſt of theſe was without ſinne, ſo the other might be, out of an habituall aſſuredneſſe of his ſalvation, as (a) *Paulinus* ſayes, to *Amandus*, [*Thou maiſt bee bold in thy prayers to God for mee, to ſay, forgive him, or blot out me, for thou canſt not bee blotted out; Iuſtum delere non poteſt Iuſtitia.*] And thus retaining ever in our minds, that our example is Chriſt, and that he dyed not conſtrained, it ſhall ſuffice to have learned by theſe places, that in Charitie men may dye ſo, and have done, and ought to doe. The laſt thing which remaines yet, is to conſider the Examples reported in the Scriptures: which cannot poſſeſſe us long; becauſe a few Rules will include many examples; and thoſe few rules which are applyable to theſe Hiſtories, have been often iterated already; and, for other Rules, which may enlighten and governe us in all occurrences, for many Reaſons I reſpite to a maturer deliberation and diſcourſe.

a *Pont. Paul. ad Amand. Epiſt.* 2.

4. How by *Paulinus* a juſt man may ſafely ſay to God, *Dele me*,

Diſtinct.

Distinct. V.

SECT. I.

AS when I entred into the examination of places of Scriptures, it seemed to me to have some weight, that in all the Judiciall and Ceremoniall Law, there was no abomination of *Selfe-homicide*.

1. Of examples in Scriptures.

So doth it, That in relating the Histories of them who killed themselves, the phrase of Scripture never diminishes them by any aspersion or or imputation for that fact, if they were otherwise vertuous, nor aggravates thereby their former wickednesse, if they were wicked

2. The phrase of Scriptures, never imputes this act to any as a sin, when it relates the history.

For my part, I am content to submit my self to that Rule, which is delivered from (a) *Iræneus*, [*That those things which the Scripture doth not reprehend, but simply lay downe, it becomes not us to accuse; nor to make our selves more diligent then God; but if any thing seeme to us irregular, our endeavour must be, to serch out the Type, and signification thereof.*]

3. *Irenæus* forbids us to accuse where God doth not.

Neither shall I, for all this, be in danger of (b) *Bezaes* answer to that Argument of *Ochius*, That though some of the Patriarches lived unreprehended in Polygamie, it concluded nothing, because (saith *Beza*) The silence of Scripture in

4. *Bezas* answer to *Ochius* reason, that some Patriarchs lived in polygamy reacheth not our case.

a *Schultet. Medul. patr. pag. 1. in l. 4. Irenæi.*

b *Beza de polyg. fo. 7.*

(c) *Jacobs* Inceſt, and in (d) *Lots*, and in (e) *Davids* unjuſt judgement; For *Siba* doth not deliver them from guiltineſſe and tranſgreſſion therein.

c *Gen.* 29.
d *Gen.*19.
e 2 *Sam.*9.2.

For our caſe differs from all others, both becauſe this act is not from any place of the Law evicted to be ſinne. And becauſe here is a concurrence of Examples, of this fact without any reprehenſion: So that that anſwere is ſo farre ſhort from reaching us, that it reached not home to that argument of *Ochius* againſt which it was oppoſed. And if in debating theſe Examples, it be found, that ſome very reverend Authors, have concluded impenitence, and conſequently utter deſertion on Gods part, and ſo eternall periſhing; the circumſtances as they appeared to him then, may have made his judgement juſt: but for any other thereupon to apply that caſe to others, will not be ſafe. For (f) [*Though a Iudge may* in cauſa verſanti *interpret the Law, that Interpretation makes not Law.*]

5 For it is not evident, that this is ſinne, by any other place of the Law; which was in all his caſes. And here many examples concurre.

f *Acacius de privileg. l.* 1. *c.* 3

SECT. II.

As therfore in the former Diſtinctions wee ſpoke of ſome approaches to the act of ſelf-killing, ſo will wee in this pauſe a very little upon two ſuch ſteps. (a) The firſt ſhalbe of the prophet in the book of *Kings*, [*who bad a ſtranger ſtrike him, and becauſe he would not pronounce a heavy judgement upon him, which was preſently*

1 Of Acts which were not fully ſelfe-murders, but approaches.
a 1 *Reg.*20.35

ſently excecuted. And then he importuned another to doe it, who did it throughly, for he wounded him with the ſtroake.] This was, to common underſtanding an unnaturall thing, that ſo holy a man ſhould make ſuch meanes to have his body violated; and ſo it ſeems the firſt apprehended it, however it pleaſed God to enlighten the ſecond. This I produce not as though the prophet inclind to it of his owne diſpoſition, for it is expreſſely in the text, that God commanded him to doe it.

2 Of the Prophet who puniſhed him who would not ſtrike him.

But becauſe this is the only place in all the ſcriptures, where thoſe which offer, or deſirously admit violence to their owne bodies, are ſaid to have done it, by the expreſſe motion of God, I collect from it, that it is not without ſome boldneſs, if others affirme without authority of the text, that the death of *Samſon* and others, had the ſame foundation, when it appeares by this, that God when he would have it underſtood ſo, is pleaſed to deliver it plainly and expreſſely.

3 That when God invites men to ſuch violence, hee ſayes ſo plainly. And therefore ſuch particular invitations may not be preſumed, where they are not expreſſed.

SECT. III.

The next before we come to thoſe who entirely killed themſelves, is *Ionas*, who by often wiſhing his own death, and moving the marriners to caſt him out into the ſea, made many ſteps towards the very act. I know that it is everie where ſaid, that thoſe words, (a) [*Take mee, and*

1 Of *Ionas*.

a 1. 12.

and cast me into the Sea,] proceeded from a prophetique spirit; And (b) St. *Hierome* saith [*that in this prophetique spirit, he foresaw that the* Ninivites *would repent, and so his preaching would be discredited.*] But if this be so, must he not also in the same Prophetique Spirit see, that their repentance must be occasioned by his going thither and preaching there? And if this perswading to his destruction, being now innocent in their understanding; for they prayed, [*Lay not innocent blood upon us.*] were from Divine motion, shall wee dare to impute also to like motions and spirit, his angry importuning of death? [*Take I beseech thee, my life from me, for it is better for me, to dye then to live.*] And after he wished from his heart to dye, and said, [*I doe well to be angry unto the death.*]

b *Procm. in Com. in Iona.*

Vers. 14.

4 3.

9.

(c) St. *Hierome* calls him *Sanctum Ionam*; and when *Lyra* observes that he had not done so, to any of the other Prophets, he concludes, that this testimony needed most in *Ionas*, who by his many reluctations against Gods will, might else fall into some suspition of eternall perishing. Which since we must be far from fearing in so eminent and exemplary a type of Christ, and yet have no ground to admit any such particular impulsion of Gods Spirit, as *Hierome* and *Lyra* pronounce him holy, for all these reluctations; so may we esteeme him advised, and ordinate, and rectified, for all these approches, which in wishing and consenting he made to his owne death.

c *Lyra prolog. in Iona.*

a Why Saint *Hier.* calls only *Ionas*, of all the Prophets, Holy.

SECT.

SECT. IV.

Of thoſe which in the Scriptures are regiſtred to have killed themſelves, *Samſon* is the firſt. A man ſo exemplar, that not onely the times before him had him in Prophecy, (a) (for of him it is ſaid,) [*Dan ſhall judge his people,*] and the times after him more conſummately in Chriſt, of whom he was a Figure, but even in his own time, other nations may ſeeme to have had ſome Type, or Copy of him, in *Hercules*.

1. Of *Samſon Iudg.* 16.

a *Pererius in Gen.* 49. 16.

His fact of ſelfe-killing is celebrated by the Church to everlaſting memory, as the act of a Martyr; and as very many others in their Homilies and expoſitions.

2 The church celebrates him as a Martyr.

So that renowned (b) *Paulinus* ſayes, [*God ſend me the death of* Sampſon, *and* Sampſons *blindneſſe, that I may live to God, and looke to God.*]

b. *Paul. Sever. Epiſt.* 4.

3 *Paulinus* wiſhes ſuch a death.

And this generall applauſe and concurrence in the praiſe of the fact, hath made many think, or at leaſt write, that he purpoſed not to kill himſelfe: being loath either to depart from their opinion who extoll him, or to admit any thing which may countenance that manner of dying. Of which perſwaſion (c) two very learned men labour to ſeeme to be.

4 They which deny that he meant to kill himſelfe, are cofuted by the text.

c *Fran. de Vict. in relect. de Hom. Greg. Valent. tom.* 3. *diſp.* 5. *q.* 8. *p.* 1.

But, beſides that ſuch an expoſing of himſelfe to unevitable danger, is the ſame fault as

Selfe-homicide, when there is any fault in it, the very Text is againſt them; for *Samſon* dyed with theſe words in his mouth, (d) [*Let mee loſe my life with the Philiſtims.*]

d *Jud.* 6. 30.

5 They which ſay he did not intend his own death principally ſay the ſame as we. *Supra.*

And though ſometimes theſe Authors adde, That hee intended not his owne death principally, but accidentally (as *Calvine* alſo ſayes, that Saint *Paul* did not deſire death for deaths ſake, but to be with Chriſt,) this can remove no man from our ſide; for wee ſay the ſame, that this may be done onely, when the honour of God may bee promoved by that way, and no other.

6 That Saint *Aug.* his anſwer to this fact, that it was by ſpeciall inſtinct, hath no ground in the hiſtory.

e *Aug. de civit. Dei cap.* 12.

Therefore to juſtifie this fact in *Samſon*, (e) Saint *Auguſtine* equally zealous of *Samſons* honour, and his own conſcience, builds ſtill upon his old foundation, [*That this was by the ſpeciall inſpiration from God.*] Which, becauſe it appeares not in the Hiſtory, nor lyes in proofe, may with the ſame eaſineſſe be refuſed, as it is preſented.

f *Sayr Theſau. Caſ. Conſc. l.* 7. *cap.* 9. *Nu.* 9.
g *Pedr. pr.* 5. *Hiſp.*

7 Of *Sayrs* reaſons in confirmation of *Auguſt.* that *Samſon* pray'd.

To give ſtrength to this opinion of *Auguſtine*, (f) our Countreyman *Sayr* preſents one reaſon preceding the fact, and (g) *Pedraca* the *Spaniard*, another ſubſequent.

The firſt is that hee prepared himſelfe to it by Prayer. But in this prayer, you may obſerve much humanity, and weakeneſſe and ſelfe-reſpect. [*O Lord*, ſaith he, *I beſeech thee, ſtrengthen me at this time onely, that I may be avenged of the Philiſtims for my two eyes.*

The

The ſecond reaſon is, that becauſe hee effected that which he deſired, it is to be preſumed, that God reſtored him his ſtrength to that end, which he asked it. But, beſides that in the text it appeares, that (h) his haire before that time, was begunne to be growne out againe, and ſo his ſtrength ſomewhat renewed; doth this prove any impulſion, and incitement, and prevention of the holy Ghoſt, to that particular act, or rather only an habituall accompanying and awaking him, to ſuch actions by which God might be honoured and glorified, whenſoever any occaſion ſhould be preſented?

When therefore he felt his ſtrength in part refreſhed, and had by Prayer intreated the perfecting thereof, ſeeing they tooke continuall occaſion from his dejection to ſcorne and reproach his God, burning with an equall fervour to revenge their double fault, and to remove the wretched occaſion thereof, he had (i) as a very ſubtile Author ſayes, the ſame reaſon to kill himſelfe, which hee had to kill them, and the ſame authoritie, and the ſame priviledge, and ſafeguard from ſinne.

And he dyed, as the ſame man ſayes, with the ſame zeale as Chriſt, unconſtrained; for (k) *In this manner of dying, as much as in any thing els, he was a Type of Chriſt.*

8. Of *Pedr.* his reaſon, that it was againſt the work of God, becauſe it was done as it was deſired.
h *v.* 22.

9 That he had as much reaſon, and authority to kill himſelfe as to kill the *Philiſtims*, and that it was only the glory of God.
i *Fra. Georg. probl.* 438.

10. *Samſon* in this manner of dying was a type of Chriſt.
k *Perer. in Gen.* 49. 16.

SECT. V.

1 Of *Saul* 1 *Sam. ult.*

2. Whether the Amalekite did help to kill *Saul.*

The next example is *Saul.* And whether he did perfect and consummat the act of killing himself, or the *Amalekite* contribute his help, it makes no difference to our purpose; But that the latter was true, may wel enough consist with the relation of the history in the (a) first place, and it appeares to be the more likely and probable out of the (b) second: And by (c) *Iosephus* it is absolutely so delivered; And the (d) scholastique history saith also, that *Saul* was too weake to force the sword through his body.

a 1. *Sam. ult.*
b 2. *Sam.* 1.
c *Antiq. l.* 7. *cap.* 15
d *Hist. Schol.*

3. Whether *Saul* be saved or no.

Two things use to be disputed of *Saul.* Whether hee were saved or no; And whether if hee perished, it was for impenitence testified or presumed by this act of his. The *Iewes* are generally indulgent to him: And the Christians generally severe upon this reason, that it is said of him, (e) [*Saul dyed for his transgressions against the Lord, and his word, and asking counsaile of a witch.*] But this doth not necessarily conclude an impenitence, or a second death. For the *Iews* say, That beleeving the sentence of *Samuel* in the apparitions, and accepting that decree as from God, he repented his former life, and then presented and delivered up himselfe and his sonnes, conformably to the revealed will of God, there in the field to be sacrificed

e 1 *Cro.* 10. 13.

ficed to him: underſtanding *Samuells* words you ſhall be with me, to be ſpoken, not generally of the ſtate of the dead, but of the ſtate of the juſt, becauſe both *Samuel* himſelf was ſo, and ſo was *Jonathan*, whoſe condition in this promiſe of being with *Samuel*, was the ſame as his Fathers. And therefore ſaith *Lyra*, [*all Iews and ſome Chriſtians agree, that leaſt by his reproach diſhonour might redound upon God, a good and Zealous man may kill himſelf, as* Samſon *did, and the Virgins.*] And he addeth, [*If other reaſons were not ſufficient to excuſe* Saul, *this alſo might juſtly be applied to him, that he did it by divine inſtinct.*]

Lyra.

Out of which I obſerve theſe two things, that he preſumes there are other reaſons ſufficient in ſome caſes, whether they were in *Sauls* caſe or no. And then the reaſon upon which *Lyra* preſumes he dyed well, [*becauſe the contrary is not declared in Scriptures, nor determined by the Church.*] And *Saul* hath a good teſtimony of ſanctity in this act, from (f) *Mallonius*, [*That as Chriſt died when he would, ſo did* Saul, *thinking it diſhonourable to dye by the hand of his, and Gods enemies.*] That argument which *Burgenſis* bringeth to the contrary, ſuffereth more force and violence in being brought in, then it giveth ſtrength to his opinion. It is, [*That if the fact were juſtifiable in* Saul, *it had beene ſo too in the Amalekite, if his profeſſion to* David *were true, That he had killed* Saul, *and conſequently* David *unjuſt in that execution.*] But, beſides that, that

4. In what caſes the Iews. and *Lyra* confeſs that a man may kill himſelfe.

5. *Lyra's* reaſons why *Saul* is to be preſumed to have dyed well.

f *Notæ in Sindon. c.* 21. *Nu.* 6.

6. *Burgenſis* reaſon to the contrary, that if *Saul* were excuſable, the Amalekite was ſo to.

Amalekite had no conſcience, nor inward knowledge of *Sauls* juſt reaſons, nor other warrant but his commandement, which might, and was to him likely to proceed from *Sauls* infirmities, it might well appeare to *David*, by his comming to tell him the newes, that he had humane reſpects in doing it, aud a purpoſe onely to deſerve well of *David*. And when both Judge and priſoner are innocent, oft times the Executioner may be a Murtherer.

7. Of *Sauls* Armor-bearer

And ſuch humane reſpects of wearineſſe and deſpaire, and ſhame, and feare, and fidelity to his Maſter, and amazement, and ſuch, ſtand in the way berweene *Sauls* Armour-bearer and all excuſes, to our underſtandings. For though the phraſe of Scripture impute nothing to him for that fact of killing himſelfe, yet I have found none that offer any particular excuſe in his defence.

SECT. VI.

1. Of *Achitophel.* 2 *Sam.* 15.

verſ. 14.

2 He ſet his houſe in order, And he was buried.

Neither doe I finde any thing to excuſe *Achitophels* death; though (as I ſaid of the other) the Hiſtory doe not accuſe that particular fact. The Text calles his counſaile good, and it ſeems he was not tranſported with paſſion, becauſe he ſet his houſe in order; And he was buried in his Fathers grave, when *Abſalon* ſlaine by anothers hand was caſt into a pit.

But if it were upon a meere diſpute of his owne

owne disgrace, or feare of ill successe, or upon any selfe respect, without proposing Gods glorie, and he repented not, he perished.

SECT. VII.

Of *Judas*, the most sinnefull instrument of the most mercifull Worke, the common, (though not generall opinion is, that he killed himselfe; but whether by hanging, or no, is more controverted,

1 Of *Judas*. *Mat.27.5. Act.1.18.*

For from the words in the (a) *Acts*, [*That he threw himselfe downe headlong, and burst asunder, and his bowels gushed out.*] (b *Euthymius* thinks, That he was rescued whilst he hanged, and carryed away, and that after that hee killed himselfe by throwing himselfe headlong.

2 *Act.1.18.*

q *Euthym. in Com. in Matt.*

And (c) *Brentius* leaves that indifferent to us, to thinke what we will thereof. But it seemes by (d) *Oecumenius*, that he did not only overlive this hanging, but that he grew to so enormous a bignesse, and burden to himselfe, that he was not able to withdraw himselfe out of a Coaches way, but had his guts crushed out so; which he receives from *Papias* the Disciple to Saint *Iohn*, whose times cannot be thought ignorant, or incurious of *Judas* History.

c *Brent. in Act. 1. 18.*
d *Oecum. in Collect. Act. Apost.*

And it is there said further, that by others it was said, that being swolne to that vastnesse, and corrupted with vermine, hee laid himselfe down

2. He dyed not by hanging himself, in the opinion of *Euthymius*, *Oecum. Papias* S. *Iohns* disciple, and *Theoph.*

down upon his field, and there his guts broke out. And this (e) *Theophilact* followes.

e *Theophilact in Mat. 7.* 3. By what meanes many places of ſcriptures have beene otherwiſe accepted, then they intend.

And it falls out very often, that ſome one Father, of ſtrong reputation and authority in his time, doth ſnatch and ſwallow ſome probable interpretation of Scripture: and then digeſting it into his Homilies, and applying it in dehortations, and encouragements, as the occaſions and diſeaſes of his Auditory, or his age require, and imagining thereupon delightfull and figurative inſinuations, and ſetting it to the Muſique of his ſtile, (as every man which is accuſtomed to theſe Meditations, ſhall often finde in himſelfe ſuch a ſpirituall wantonneſſe, and devout ſtraying into ſuch delicacies,) that ſenſe which was but probable, growes neceſſary, and thoſe who ſucceed, had rather enjoy his wit, then vexe their owne; as often times we are loath to change or leave off a counterfeit ſtone, by reaſon of the well ſetting thereof.

By this meanes, I thinke, it became ſo generally to be beleeved, that the fruit which *Eve* eat, was an Apple; And that *Lots* wife was turned to a pillar of Salt; And that *Abſalon* was hanged by the haire of the head; And that *Iephthe* killed his Daughter; And many other ſuch, which grew currant, not from an evidence in the Text, but becauſe ſuch an acceptation, was moſt uſefull, and applyable. Of this number, *Iudas* caſe might be.

But

But if it were not, that act of killing himselfe, is not added to his faults in any place of Scriptures; no not in those (f) two Psalmes of particular accusations, and bitter imprecations against him, as they are ordinarily taken to be Prophetically purposed and directed.

4 *Iudas* not accused of this in the story, nor in the two prophetical Psalms of him.

f *Psal. 69. et 109.*

And even of this man, whose sinne, if any can exceed mercy, was such, *Origen* durst hope, not out of his erromous compassion, and sinnefull charity, by which he thinks that even the Devill shall be saved, but out of *Iudas* repentance. He sayes, (g) [*The Devill led him to the sinne, and then inducted him to that sorrowfulnesse which swallowed him.*] But speaking of his repentance, he sayes, [(h) *Those words*, when *Iudas* saw that he was condemned, *belong to* Judas *himselfe, for Christ was not then condemned.* And upon this conscience and consideration, began his repentance. [*For, it may be, saith* Origen, *that Satan which had entred into him, staid with him till Christ was betray'd, and then left him, and thereupon repentance followed.*] And perchance, sayes he, he went to prevent, and goe before his Master, who was to dye, and so to meet him with his naked soule, that he might gaine Mercy by his confession and prayers.]

5. *Origens* opinion of his repentance.

g *Ex not. Em. Sá in Mat. 27.*

h *Aquin. catena aurea.*

And (i) *Calvine*, (though his purpose be, to enervate and maime, (or at least, declare it to be so defective,) that repentance which is admitted for sufficient in the *Romane Church*, sayes that [*In Iudas there was perfect contrition of heart,*

i *In Mat. 27. 4.*

6. *Calvin* acknowledges all degrees of repentance which the Romane Church requireth, to salvation, to have beene in *Iudas*.

Confeßion of the mouth, and ſatisfaction for the money.]

But (k) *Petilian*, againſt whom Saint *Auguſtine* writes, proceeded further in juſtification of *Iudas* laſt act, then any. For hee ſaid, [*That in ſuffering death when hee repented, and ſo was a Confeſſor, hee became a Martyr.*] Which opinion being pronounced ſingularly and undefenſibly; (l) Saint *Auguſtine* anſwers as choleriquely, [*Laqueum talibus reliquit.*] Yet Saint *Auguſtine* himſelfe confeſſeth, that an innocent man, ſhould more have ſinned in ſuch an act, then *Iudas* did, becauſe in his execution there were ſome degrees of juſtice.

But of his actuall impenitence I purpoſed not to ſpeake, nor of his repentance, but onely to obſerve to you, that this laſt fact is not imputed to him, nor repentance ſaid to be precluded thereby.

k 23. q. 5. *Tu dixiſti.* gloſ.

7 *Petilianus* his opinion of his Martyrdome.

l *Ibid. Si non licet.*

8. *Iudas* act had ſome degrees of juſtice by S. *Aug.*

SECT.

SECT. VIII.

For the Passive action of *Eleazar*, none denies, but that that endangering of himselfe, was an act of Vertue: yet it was a forsaking and exposing himselfe to certaine Destruction.

1. Of *Eleazer Macab.* 1. 6. 46. *Jos. Ant.* 12. 15.

For every Elephant had thirty two men upon him: and was guarded with one thousand Foot, and five hundred Horse: And this which he slew, was in his opinion, the Kings Elephant, and therefore the better provided.

7. All confess that an act of vertue.
3. The destruction was certaine.

Howsoever hee might hope to escape before the very act of killing the Elephant, by creeping under it, was a direct killing of himselfe, as expressely as *Samson* pulling down the house

4. He did as much to his owne death as *Samson*.

And the reasons of this action, are rendered in the Text to have been, To deliver his people, and to get a perpetuall name.

5 The reasons of his act in the text,

And this fact doth Saint *Ambrose* extoll by many glorious circumstances; As [*That hee flung away his Target, which might have sheltred him, That despising death, he forced into the midst of the Army, and* Inclusus ruina, magis quam oppressus, suo est sepultus Triumpho; *And that by death he begot peace, as the heire of his valour.*]

6. S. *Ambrose* his extolling thereof.

And as very many Schoolemen have intended and exerciſed their wits in the praiſe of this action, So(a) *Cajetan* gives ſuch a reaſon thereof, as is applyable to very many *Selfe-homicides*. [That to expoſe our ſelves to certaine death, if our firſt end be not our owne death, but common good, it is lawfull. For, ſaith hee, Our actions which bee Morally good or bad, muſt bee judged to bee ſuch, by the firſt reaſon which moves them, not by any accident, or concomitance, accompanying, or ſucceding them, though neceſſarily.] And this reſolution of *Cajetan*, will include many Caſes, and inſtances, which are headlongly by intemperate cenſures condemned.

a *Cajet. in* 16. *Iud.*

7. *Cajetanus* his reaſon for *Eleazers* juſtification, appliable to very many other caſes of *Self-homicide*.

SECT. IX.

The fall of *Raſis*, which is the laſt Example, is thus reported. [*Hee was beſieged and fired; willing to dye manfully, and eſcape reproach, unworthy of his Houſe, hee fell upon his Sword; for haſte, hee miſt his ſtroke, and threw himſelfe from the Caſtle wall; yet roſe up againe, and ranne to a high Rocke, tooke out his owne bowells, and threw them among the people, calling upon the Lord of life and ſpirit, and ſo died.*]

1. *Raſis Mac.* 2. 14.

2. His reaſons in the text.

Which Act the Text accuſeth not; nor doth St. (a) *Thomas* accuſe it of any thing elſe, but that it

a *Aquin.* 22. *q.* 64. *ar.* 5.

it was Cowardlineſſe. Which alſo (b) *Ariſtotle* imputes to this manner of dying, as wee ſaid (c) before.

But either he ſpoke at that time, ſerviceably and advantagiouſly to the point which hee had then in hand; or elſe hee ſpoke, *vt plurimum*, becauſe for the moſt part infirmities provoke men to this act.

For (d) S. *Auguſtine* who argues as earneſtly as *Ariſtotle*, that this is not greatneſſe of minde, confeſſeth yet, that in *Cleombrotus* it was: who onely upon reading *Plato* his *Phædo*, killed himſelfe; for, ſaith *Auguſtine*: [*When no calamitie urged him, no crime, either true or imputed, nothing but greatneſſe of minde moved him, to apprehend death, and to breake the ſweet bands of this life.*] And though he adde, [*That it was done rather* Magnè *then* Benè;] yet by this, that which wee ſeeke now is in Confeſſion, that ſometimes there is in this act, Greatneſſe and Courage. Which upon the ſame reaſon which moved *Ariſtotle*, and all the reſt, which is, to quench in men their naturall love to it, he is loth to afford in too many caſes.

For hee (e) ſayes [*That, exceept* Lucrece, *it is not eaſie to finde any example worth the preſcribing, or imitating, but* Cato: *Not becauſe hee onely did it, but becauſe being reputed learned and honeſt, men might juſtly thinke, that that was well done, and might well bee done againe, which hee did.*] Yet for all this, hee is loth to let *Catoes* act paſſe with ſo much

b *Ariſtotelis Ethic. l. 3. c. 7.*

c *Supra fo.* 130 3. Whether it be puſillanimity, as *Aqui. Auguſt. and Ariſtot.* ſays.

d *Auguſt. de civit. Dei l. 1. c. 22.*

4. S. *Aug.* confeſſes that to have beene greatnes of mind, in *Cleombrotus*.

e c. 23.

5. How much great examples governe.

much approbation, For hee addes, [That yet many of his learned friends thought it a weakneſſe to let him dye ſo.] And this hee doth becauſe when men have before them the precedent of a brave example, they contend no further, then what he did, not why.

f *Vell. Paterc. de morte Grac.*

For it is truely ſaid, (f) Examples doe not ſtoppe, nor conſiſt in the Degree where they begunne, but grow, and no man thinkes that unworthy for him, which profiteth another.] Yet, Saint *Auguſtine* though upon this reaſon loth to give glory to many examples, allows all greatneſſe and praiſe to *Regulus*, (g) of whom we ſpoke before: though, to my underſtanding there are in it many impreſſions of falſehood, and of oſtentation, from all which *Catoes* hiſtory is delivered.

g *Supra*

h. *Diog. Laer. l. 6.*

6. That it was reputed cowardlines in *Antiſthenes* extreamly ſick not to kill himſelf.

And, to end this point, whether it be alwais puſillanimity, *Laertius* ſays (h) [*That in* Antiſthenes *the philoſopher*, videbatur firme mollius, *that lying extreame ſick, and* Diogenes *asking him, if he lacked a freind, (meaning to kill him,) and offering him alſo his dagger, to doe it himſelfe, the Philoſopher ſaid he deſired an end of paine, but not of life.*]

7. Vpon what reaſons *Lyra* excuſeth this and like actions.

As therefore this fact of *Raſis*, may have proceeded from greatneſſe, So is it by *Lyra* excuſed from all ſin, by reaſons applyable to many other. For he ſayes, [Either to eſcape torment, by which probably a man might be ſeduced to Idolatry, or take away occaſion of making them

them reproach God in him, a man may kill himſelfe; For, ſaith hee, Both theſe caſes, *Ordinantur in Deum.*]

And this (i) *Francis a Victoria* allowes as the more probable opinion.] And (k) *Sotus*, and (l) *Valentia*, follow *Thomas* his opinion herein; And *Burgenſis* condemnes it upon this preſumption, That hee could not doe this for love of the common good, becauſe this could not redeeme his people, being already captive. So that his accuſing him helpes us thus much, that if by his death hee could have redeemed them, hee might lawfully have done it.

i *Relect. de homicid. reſp. ad ult. argum.* k *Sotus l. 2. de juſt. q. 3. ar. 8.* l *Valen. to. 3. diſp. 5. q. 8.* 8 *Burgenſis* reaſons confeſſes he might have had juſt cauſes.

Concluſion.

AND this is as farre as I allowed my diſcourſe to progeſſe in this way: forbidding it earneſtly all darke and dangerous Seceſſions and divertings into points of our Free-will, and of Gods Deſtiny: though allowing many ordinary contingencies, to be under our Election, it may yet ſeem reaſonable, that our maine periods, of Birth, of Death, and of chief alterati-

1. Why I refraind diſcours of deſtinie herein.

alterations in this life be more immediately wrought upon by Gods determination. It is uſefully ſaid, and appliable to good purpoſe (though (a) by a wicked man, and with intention to croſſe *Moſes*,) [*That man was made of ſhaddow, and the Devil of fire.*] For as ſhaddow is not darknes, but groſſer light, ſo is mans underſtanding in theſe myſteries, not blind but clouded. And as fire doth not always give light (for that is accidentall, and it muſt have aire to work upon,) but it burneth naturally, ſo that deſire of knowledge which the Devill kindles in us, (as he doth as willingly bring bellows to inflame a heart curious of knowledge, as he doth more aſhes to ſtupifie and bury deeper, a ſlumbering underſtanding) doth not alwaies give us light, but it always burnes us, and imprints upon our judgment ſtigmaticall marks, and at laſt ſeares up our conſcience.

a *Alcor. Azo.* 65.

2. Man made of ſhadow and the devill of fire by the *Alcoran*.

3. Our adverſaries reaſons contradict one another.

If then reaſons which differ from me, and my reaſons be otherwiſe equall, yet theirs have this diſadvantage, that they fight with themſelves and ſuffer a Civill Warre of contradiction. For many of their reaſons incline us to a love of this life, and a horror of death, and yet they ſay often, that wee are too much addicted to that naturally. But it is well noted by (b) *Alcuinus*, (and I thinke from Saint *Auguſtine*) [*That though there bee foure things which wee muſt love, yet there is no precept given upon any more then two, God and our neighbour.*] So that the other which concernes

b *Alcuin. Ep.* 23.

4 No præcept given to love our ſelves.

concerne our ſelves, may be pretermitted in ſome occaſions.

But becauſe of the benefits of death, enough hath beene occaſionally interſerted before, having preſented (c) *Cyprians* encouragement to it, who out of a contemplation that the whole frame of the world decayed and languiſhed, cries to us, [Nutant parietes, *The walls and the roofe ſhake, and would'ſt not thou goe out? Thou art tyred in a pilgrimage, and wouldſt thou not goe home?*] I will end with applying (d) *Auſonius* thanks to the Emperour, to death, which deſerveth it better, [*Thou provideſt that thy benefits, and the good which thou bringeſt ſhall not be tranſitory; and that the ills from which thou delivereſt us, ſhall never returne.*] Since therefore becauſe death hath a little bitternes, but medicinall, and a little allay, but to make it of more uſe, they would utterly recline & avert our nature from it, (as (e) *Paracelſus* ſays, of that foule contagious diſeaſe which then had invaded mankind in a few places, and ſince overflown in all, that for puniſhment of generall licentiouſnes, God firſt inflicted that diſeaſe, and when the diſeaſe would not reduce us, he ſent a ſecond worſe affliction, which was ignorant, and torturing Phyſitians.

So I may ſay of this caſe, that in puniſhment of *Adams* ſinne, God caſt upon us an infectious death, and ſince hath ſent us a worſe plague of men, which accompanie it with ſo much horrour and affrightment, that it can ſcarce be made

5 Encouragements to contempt of death

c *Cypr. Serm. de mortalitate.*

d *Gratiar. act. de conſ.*

e *Chyrurgia mag. de ulcer.*

wholſome and agreeable to us. That which (f) *Hippocrates* admitted in caſes of much profit, and ſmall danger, they teach with too much liberty, [*That worſe meat may be given to a patient, ſo it be pleaſanter, and worſe drink, ſo it be more acceptable.*] But though I thought it therefore needfull, to oppoſe this defenſative, as well to reencourage men to a juſt contempt of this life, and to reſtore them to their nature, which is a deſire of ſupreame happines in the next life by the loſſe of this, as alſo to rectify, and waſh again their fame, who religiouſly aſſuring themſelves that in ſome caſes, when wee were deſtitute of other meanes, we might be to our ſelves the ſtewards of Gods benefits, and the Miniſters of his mercifull Iuſtice, had yet, being, (g as *Ennodius* ſays) Innocent within themſelves, incurred *damnum opinionis*, yet (as I ſaid before) I abſtained purpoſely from extending this diſcourſe to particular rules, or inſtances, both becauſe I dare not profeſſe my ſelf a Maiſter in ſo curious a ſcience, and becauſe the limits are obſcure, and ſteepy, and ſlippery, and narrow, and every errour deadly, except where a competent dilligence being fore-uſed, a miſtaking in our conſcience may provide an excuſe.

As to cure diſeaſes by touch, or by charme, (both which one (h) excellent Chirurgian, and one (i) excellent philoſopher, are of opinion may be done, becauſe what vertue ſoever the heavens infuſe into any creature, man, who is Al, is capable of,

6. Why I abſtaine from particular directions.

f *Aphor. l. 2. 38.*

g *Ennodius ad Celul.*

7. Laws forbid ordinarie men to cure by extraordiry meanes, yet the Kings of *England*, and *France*, & *Spaine* cure ſo.

h *Paracelſus Chyrurg. Mag. tract. 2. cap. 8. et de tranſ. cap. 10.*

i *Pet. Pomp. de incant. c. 4.*

of, and being borne when that vertue is exacted, may receive a like impreſſion, or may give it to a word, or character made at that inſtant, if he can underſtand the time) though theſe, I ſay be forbidden by divers Lawes, out of a Juſt prejudice that vulgar owners of ſuch a vertue, would miſ-imploy, it, yet none miſlikes that the Kings of *England* & *France*, ſhould cure one ſickneſſe by ſuch meanes, nor (k) that the Kings of *Spaine*, ſhould diſpoſſeſs Dæmoniaque perſons ſo, becauſe Kings are juſtly preſumed to uſe all their power to the glory of God; So is it fit, that this priviledge of which we ſpeak ſhould be contracted and reſtrained.

k *Caſtanæus catal. glo. mun. par. 5. conſider. 1.*

For, that is certainly true of this, which (l) *Caſtianus* ſaith of a ly, [*That it hath the nature of* Ellebore, *wholſome in deſperate diſeaſes, but otherwiſe poyſon.*] though I dare not averre with him, [*That we are in deſperate diſeaſes, whenſoever we are* in ingenti lucro, aut damno, et in humilitate, ad evitandam gloriam.] Howſoever it *Caſſianus* miſtake that, and we this, yet (m) as he, and *Origen*, and *Chryſoſtome*, and *Hierome*, are excuſed for following *Platoes* opinion, that a ly might have the nature of medicine, and be admitted in many caſes, becauſe in their time the church had not declared her ſelf in that point, nor pronounced that a ly was naturally ill, by the ſame reaſon am I excuſable in this Paradox. Againſt the reaſons whereof, and againſt charity, if prejudice, or contempt of my weaknes, or miſ-devo-

l *Caſian. l.* 17 *cap.* 17. *ad* 25. As *Hier. Orig. Chryſoſt.* and *Caſianus* are excuſd for following *Plato* in the toleration of a ly, becauſe the church had not then pronounced, ſo may it be in this.

m *Obſervat. in Caſian. in fine l. fo.* 740.

tion have ſo precluded any, that they have not beene pleaſed to taſt and digeſt them, I muſt leave them to their drowſines ſtill, and bid them injoy the favour of that indulgent Phyſitian, *Qui non concoxit, dormiat.*

Cornelius Celſus ſent. 15.

FINIS.

20. *Sept.* 1644.

Imprimatur

Io: Rushworth.